

Spirit Story

Shane McDowell

Spirit Story

Copyright © 2016 by Shane McDowell

All rights reserved. This book or any portion thereof may not be reproduced or used in any manner whatsoever without the express written permission of the publisher except for the use of brief quotations in a book review.

Printed in the United States of America

First Printing, 2016

“I’m not saying I’m going to change the world, but I guarantee that I will spark the brain that will change the world.” – Tupac Shakur

“I didn’t choose the thug life; the thug life chose me.” – Tupac Shakur

“My mama always used to tell me: 'If you can't find somethin' to live for, you best find somethin' to die for.'” – Tupac Shakur

“Love what you do and do what you love. Don't listen to anyone else who tells you not to do it. You do what you want, what you love. Imagination should be the center of your life.” – Ray Bradbury

Author's Note

I respect all religions and religious beliefs from all people of every race, gender, and ethnicity around the world with me writing this novel, thank you.

Chapter 1

It was pitch black. The dark space lay silent as the orb of energy blasted through the air, surging through with intense force. The restless soul kept charging through the air dodging asteroids, and small remnants of debris. Its pulsing energy rippled around the light, blue sphere with intense acceleration, emulating the look of being its own asteroid itself. It traveled through space until it came into view of the planet's atmosphere. The soul's energy shone bright as it struck the ground with great force. The lustrous orb of energy landed safe on the strange planet.

The orb's shape dissipated on grassy plain beneath it and began to spread across the land with a glow. The bright energy lit up and formed into the body shape of a young man—his body stood stiff as a rock on the cold, dark earth.

His body lay on the open prairie surrounded by forest and slowly his eyes clenched in and his body began shifting back and forth before he began to lift up his head, staggering in confusion. He placed his hand against his head and opened his eyes. He looked around back and forth like a lost child trying to find his way.

“W-where am I?” His head rung with an intense headache, which felt like a ringing bell had just sound off near his ear. “Argh...damn...my heads killing me...where the heck am I?” He gleamed out and looked around again now with head cleared from his initial waking, a huge open space of grassland came into around him with forest encapsulating the plain walls on all sides. He sat there in a gaze and blinked twice in a perplexing manner. Choosing to no longer waste time, he began to get up as he thought to himself of what got him into this puzzling situation. He lifted his feet off the ground and began to push his arms up from his knees and stood tall in the grassy field. Again he looked around back and forth with much intensity, sliding his eyes across the field trying to scope out what was there. He saw grassy, bright fields and much open spaced, much to be desired to explore and travel across as it ached at him on which way he should go toward. He soon came to a decision in his mind to take the route behind him since he felt it was the safest way and it was the closest route nearby him at the time. He shifted his body in a steady motion, spinning his right arm with his left hand on his shoulder trying to adjust his body to the aching slumber he just awoke from. He faced the dark forest and took a mild gulp in and began to walk toward it with intense caution. He sauntered closer and closer to the shadowy entrance until his figure vanished as it became encased in the twilight dusk of evergreen, shadowy forest surrounding him all around.

The boy continued forth through the ominous thicket. The darkness seemed meeker than before when he entered the woody area from the outside space. As he traveled along the woods and tree leave tops cascaded small rays of light and luminosity that helped brighten the area and

mood a tad more and made it dash less spooky than possible. Maybe it being daytime in this strange place he was in was a major factor the boy thought to himself. He continued forward among the shining gold evergreen and quickened his pace as he approached a closing exit pass a few meters before him. He scurried through the thicket with intense haste. The boy emerged through the thicket and appeared out into another wide-open space. Not as round the previous but just as widespread and clear to the naked eye the setting seemed to the boy. As the boy continued to look around the area for any signs of life or civilization, he came across a nice, vivid lake off to the left hand side his positioning in the open space. Its waves gleamed with bright shining strokes as the ripples refracted the starry sunlight striking down the clear surface. As he looked across towards the starry ocean waves in the moderate distance far past his own, he began to see two small dark silhouettes forming in his line of sight. He squinted his eyes in anticipation of what these figures could be; he soon came to the realization that they could be people. People who could tell what was going on and where he was! He had to know. He leaped forward away from the thicket and ran down across the riverbank towards the cryptic figures.

“Hey, you guys!” screeched the boy in haste “Are you guys from around here? I’m trying to figure out where I’m at.” As he trucked across the rough terrain, he caught up to the dark figures before him in which revealed to the boy two shadowy black dressed looking males turning around in a slow motion as he halted panting from his mild sprint. The males looked to be light skinned, with skinny but tough physiques to their mild build. They wore dark shades with black outfits on both of them, one encased with an open black jacket over a dark shirt, with matching colored attire and the other had the same look with no jacket designed on him just showing a black t-shirt over his black jeans, with similar matching dark colored extra clothing over what he was already wearing. They looked at him with intense disdain. They almost looked like secret agents that had felt like they’d been caught in the thick of the act of their next important mission, ready to eliminate the single witness at a moment’s notice. They stood stiff, gripping their hands on guard as the lone feeble boy came forward in front of them.

“Hey—,” the boy exhaled wheezing, “do you guys know where I can find a town or city? And where is this exactly? I’m not so sure where I am and if I’ve been here before. Ah, I guess that’s too many questions at once, I’ll should you probably tell my name fir—”

The man to the right charged him fast almost like a speeding bullet, blasting forward a right punch to the boy’s left side. He reacted in time and managed to ease by it with a swift dodge to the right. The boy’s face became more perplexed with the sudden shock of the situation.

The man in shades followed with a few high jabs and punches toward the boy with great speed. The boy blocked and guarded strong, shifting his arm in a cross in reflex to the fast paced action. The dark clothed man followed his quick jabs with a final martial art like punch that broke the boys guard fast and caused them to skid back several inches before they both broke off and jumped backwards, with both standing on guard for the next move.

“What was that all about? Geez, you guys sure know how to welcome somebody. A simple hello would have sufficed.” The dark clothed warriors did not listen to his words or jokes. The other dark clothed partner wearing an additional black jacket positioned just behind his cohort, reached down toward his side aiming for his waist and reached deep into his holster and pulled out a gun, aiming it straight at the boy’s face with no remorse or emotion.

“Hey, no need to get crazy now! You guys are pulling a gun on me? I didn’t want any trouble, I just wanted to ask you for—” He fired at him without hesitation. The boy saw the shot coming much better now that he was done with his little sparring match from earlier and he had a considerable amount of distance from this target compared to before since his first opponent

charged in much closer to him. He dodged the glaring red bullet fast that grazed his upper shoulder; he then noticed that the shot was that of a laser beam and not of a normal bullet shot.

The dark jacketed man continued firing. Waves of red laser beams accelerated at the boy's position. He tried to maneuver around them like the best dodge ball player out there. His body twisted and turned back and forth, dropping to the ground and leaping upwards trying to escape any brute attacks from the maddening assault. The shots stopped firing. The boy looked up from the mild smoke in the air. And witnessed a change in behavior between both the assailants in front of him.

They began lifting one of their free hands up, holding them in a straightforward motion facing towards the boy. The boy's face stayed confused, struck with immense complexity and confusion, and his eyes soon began to falter and wane as he began to see the palm of their hands light up with great intensity. Bright red and blue lights, each separate from both the men lit up in their palms. The red light emitting from the jacketed one matched the color of his earlier gun that gave the boy already such a hard time before. He couldn't believe the amount of power that was just about to strike him next, since with the intensity and speed of the prior beams of energy, the next two attacks aiming toward him now seemed as if they were charging, building much more power, intensity, strength to try to take him out in one blow. He knew whatever they were about to do that it wouldn't be good, and tried his best to leap out the way while crossing his arms, but soon realized it was futile since he felt the power and speed of the next two blows were to be much more powerful.

He braced himself, clenching his fist in anticipation of the foreseen attack. His eyes closed with strong force, he didn't understand it or know what was going on but the boy had no time to contemplate before these high-powered energy beams launched at him to send him to oblivion. He felt all was lost and continued to brace himself for the inevitable. The charged beams of raging energy surged through his eardrums like lightning and he felt all hope was lost until all went silent around him. Time itself felt like an eternity and its as if everything had begun to slowdown in slow motion.

The boy didn't have enough time to react before a huge flash of white light shone down right in front of him from the clear blue sky, encasing the dark clothed soldiers at every angle imaginable before the boy's very eyes. The boy's face stood in awe as the ray of light blasted through earth, disintegrating everything in its path, almost like an atomic bomb was set off just before him. The boy blocked the intense light with eyes closed and arms up until the intensity began to subside with ashes among the red earth, recovering from the immense magnitude of the attack. The boy began to place his arms down as he heard a voice call out from above.

"Hey, down there. Are you alright?" A shining figure gleamed in the sky descending towards the boy at a modest pace.

"What? Who's there? What do you want with me?" He squinted his eyes as remnants of the bright light still flashed with vigor in his retinas, as the remaining bright light subsided in the air, with the adjust of his eyesight, he witnessed a floating female figure hovering on a cloud, several feet up over his head. His eyes grew wide as day reflecting facial expressions with a variety of emotions.

"Whoaaa! What is that?" His eyes stood fixed on the female figure.

"Hey, I'm a girl you know, I'm not a simple object," she giggled. The boy's stare stood stiff and strong. The suspended girl began to edge closer, hovering in talking distance as she smiled even more with her hand against her mouth, as if trying to hold back another giggle, she

closed her eyes for a few moments, still smiling with playfulness, she uttered her following magic words.

“I’m an angel.”

A dark silence struck the air. The boy’s head felt like it jerked back a bit upon hearing her. He wasn’t too sure if he heard correctly or if anything made sense anymore. They continued staring at each other with immense focus. The boy’s face stayed stunned as he kept staring into her eyes with a robotic effect.

“... ”

“What?” said the floating girl confused.

W-wait, you said you’re a what again?” shaking his head with his eyes closed, as if trying to wake up from a potential dream.

“I said I’m an angel. You know, like the ones that can fly and that have wings and everything, although I’m not wearing any right now, we generally don’t like to wear them, we can get around just fine without any wings to wear.”

The boy stood there with his eyes as wide and stiff as ever, finally blinking, mouth wide open, trying to assess the situation before him a little better. Taking his eyes off her for a second, he placed his blank stare off into open space, and then looked straight at the palm of his hand.

“But—but that can’t be, there’s no angels in the real world. Are there? This doesn’t make any sense... Wh-where am I... exactly?”

“Oh you’re just in the *afterlife*.” Her body still laid forward, hovering along the cloud like a snake in the air with her hands against her chin, posing as if she were lying on a couch.

“You’re on another planet in another dimension.”

The boy went back to staring at her with all seriousness. “What... what... did you... just say...?”

“I said you’re on another planet. You’re in the afterlife!”

The boy’s facial expression transitioned from an awestruck fascination, mouth wide-open and all, into a massive smile of excitement and relief.

“Ar-are... you... SERIOUS!” The boy’s face lit up very strong. “SERIOUSLY! I’M IN THE AFTERLIFE! I’M SERIOUSLY IN THE AFTERLIFE? YOU’RE NOT PULLING MY LEG ARE YOU?”

“Nope,” said the hovering white angel still suspended just over the boy’s eyesight, “this is the afterlife. You’re a lucky soul to have me come along when I did, you would have been toast if those blasts hit you at your current level. They should be really careful to where they place those androids. Somebody could definitely get hurt if they spot someone suspicious by accident who’s innocent. But anyways so—”

The boy wasn’t listening. He bent over with his head down, his hands trembling. His body looked rattled like it was just about to explode with emotion.

“Hey, you don’t have to push yourself, I’m sure the situation had to be a traumatizing experience for everyone—”

“YEEEEAAAHHHH!” The boy’s face was balled with excitement as he lifted his arms up in the air with a big smile like that of a cheerleader.

“This is like so awesome! This is so awesome!” The boy started jumping up and down back and forth, thrusting both his fists in a punching motion fast with a huge smile basking with positive energy. He was ecstatic and excited beyond belief.

“Calm down, calm down. What are you so excited about?” said the perplexed angel.

The boy slowed down his actions and directed his smile, eyes open wide toward the beloved girl in the sky before him. His fists were still clenched in trying to contain the excitement he was feeling all over surging through his body.

“Sorry, I mean... Do you know what this means? That’s there’s an afterlife! That there’s really an afterlife! I’ve always dreamed of that! Everyone’s always dreamed of that! Some people always believed there to be one, with so many religions out there.” The boy started jumping up and down even further. His excitement exuberated through the air as he swung his arms back and forth, trying to contain it all in but couldn’t help continuing leaping for joy.

“So many people we’re hoping for this! And here it is! I mean some people still don’t believe... you see, when I was still living on Earth... and... so wait... hold up. I’m getting to ahead of myself. Where am I? Is this Earth? Or is this someplace else? This place doesn’t seem like Heaven or Hell exactly.”

The boy ended his sentence with a perplexed look on his face, and the girl giggled again in jovial playfulness.

“Close enough. I wouldn’t call this Earth exactly. I’d call this Other Earth, that’s more like it. That’s where we are.”

“Other Earth?” The boy’s face continued on with a straight face of perplexity and confusion. “What’s that? Where is that?”

“Like I said the afterlife.” Her constant giggling never ceased. “You’re a pretty funny guy aren’t you? But anyways, so yeah the place we’re standing on right now is called Other Earth. That’s the name the inhabitants here have called this planet were standing on right now. It’s an alternate Earth existing parallel to the original, in a parallel universe. The parallel universe is named the Spirit World. That’s where we are right now.”

The boy’s face lit up like a happy schoolboy. “Yo! That’s crazy man! So, I’m like in another world?”

The floating girl nodded in reply. “Yup, in an entirely new universe.”

He couldn’t believe it. This was really happening. The boy placed his hands over his head, gripping and clasping his hair as if trying to pull it out in response to all this excitement.

“I can see your quite surprised, said the floating girl, “there’s a lot more to say really. To summarize the continent were standing on right now is called Neo-Pangaea. And the country is a single-unified country called the United Republic of Moder. People here usually say Moder or URM for short to make it easier to refer too. I’ll get into the details of all that later on.”

The boy’s face remained flustered. “Jesus Christ, this is like too much at once... I’m seriously here.” The boy rubbed his face from the top down with his sweaty drenched hands. All the hopping and skipping seemed to have gotten to him.

“Sooo... wait... what are you again? What’d you say you were again?” he repeated, gazing up at her with a curious expression.

“Like I said, I’m an angel, *angel*.”

The boy continued to give her a strange look. “I’d normally have a hard time believing you right now if it weren’t for me witnessing you before my eyes hovering before me like this. With the white suit and everything.”

“It’s a dress,” the floating girl said correcting him, “since I’m a girl after all, all the angels have to wear these when in our formal setting, or if we have to work someplace. I’ll change into my casual attire later on, but anyway...” The floating girl began to alter her position until she became upright, hopping off her cloud, still hovering in the air in place just above the boy.

“My name is Lily, I’m an angel again and I was sent here to retrieve your soul and guide you back safely from harm’s way. We’re able to detect stray souls that might not end up in the landing sites that we intended and setup. We predicted your arrival a few weeks in advance but I couldn’t actually detect you until moments after your arrival, I only got a rough estimate of the area you would land. You were described as being special, a special kind of soul landing, so I was notified specially to come pick you up on time as close as possible. But I don’t know the details on why you’re so different, so I was very excited to see you up close.”

“Whoa wait, that’s too much at once. What are you saying? Stray souls? Landing site?” The boy bobbed his head to the side with his eyes closed in confusion. “I’m not sure I’m following you here.”

“Well listen, that’s not so important anyway, what’s important is that I’m here to pick you up now. You’re a lost cause without me, because you would have been murdered again by those security bots, and we wouldn’t want that happening now would we.”

“Oh yeah, that’s right!” The boy’s face lit up again with energy. “Those freaks attacked me for no reason, and I was just trying to ask for directions! What’s up with that?”

“Those were security droids, androids specifically designed for guarding the area,” she said nodding her head. “They were designed to be dressed in black like secret agents and look like bodyguards. They have the speed, stealth, and reflex capabilities of a ninja along with powerful martial arts strength and armed weaponry on hand. If they feel the need to they have built in beams of energy they can use to fire at their opponents as well, but there not supposed to do that normally unless they encounter a strong opponent. They were just picking on you I presume, unless maybe you are that strong? You don’t look it but hey what would I know since we just met today.”

The boy’s face became flustered. “Hey lady, don’t underestimate me, I’m plenty strong. I was just caught off guard and surprised when they started shooting lasers at me. I mean how was I supposed to react?”

The floating girl chuckled again once more. “Alright, alright, I understand, your plenty strong.” The girl got back on and began shifting around the boy on her cloud, gliding in a slow motion through the air. “But more importantly, what is your name? I’ve already told you mine, its Lily if you’ve forgotten.”

The boy nodded his head back and forth. “Yeah, yeah. My bad, so the name’s Sean. It’s pronounced like Shawn not Seen. That’s a common mistake people make a lot.” The boy began to scratch his head for the next detail of his introduction. “I’m twenty years old and um—I like action movies and video games and um—”

“Slow down, slow down. I didn’t ask for your life’s story, just your name was fine.”

“Oh, ok. I can’t afford most of that stuff anyway, I could only do that stuff if they allowed for me to at the library, back on Earth and all that.” The boy scratched his head again in confusion looking up at her. “So what happens next?”

“Well I suppose I should tell you why you’re here, or what you could possibly be doing if you’re up for the challenge. We’re very close to the main city of this land we’re in right now. I should bring you over there to sign you up for the tournament.”

“Wait, what was that? Did you say tournament?” Sean’s eyes soon began to brighten with excitement.

Lily nodded her head, “Yeah, we have something called The Millennial Tournament here. It’s a tournament held every thousand years to commemorate the founding of our planet. I think you’ll fit in nicely.”

Sean's face was flushed with rays of joy and delight. He couldn't believe what he was hearing. He was ecstatic with excitement and clenched both his fist together in eagerness as he held a huge smile across his face. "That sounds amazing! I didn't know they had a tournament here! Yeah, sign me up in heartbeat! I've never even been in a tournament before! I've only been in street fights with bullies and thugs and stuff back on Earth. Wow I can't wait to see what the stadium looks like!"

Sean put his hand on head and began to clasp his red and white baseball cap, trying to contain the excitement emanating through his entire body.

"Well, we should get going then," said Lily. "If we stay talking here we'll miss the preliminaries."

Sean nodded his head forward. "Alright, great but what am I going to do? I can't fly!"

"Don't worry about that," Lily's face lit up with confidence, "because I have a way I can help you fly, at least temporarily."

"How's that?"

Lily took a deep breath and began to close her eyes. She followed her actions by putting her hands together in a praying motion until a ball of white light began to appear. The white light ball was opaque and luminous, resembling a ball of energy that surrounded the entirety of her hands. She began to take them apart now creating two balls of energy for each hand and aimed it towards Sean's feet. The balls of energy launched out of her palms and landed straight on Sean's feet. Sean's face lit up as she was doing this, as he could not fully comprehend what was going on. His feet lit up with a bright, white glow and right after a sudden rush of pulse waves rose out of the ground, lifting up parts of his clothes like a powerful under breeze.

"Whoa, what did you just do?" said Sean, staring down at his feet with great wonder. "Did you give me some superpowers or something?"

Lily chuckled at his remark. "Well not exactly but close. I gave you a temporary ability. The ability to fly."

"Wow, really?" Sean began examining his feet in great detail. "That sounds amazing! But how do I actually do it for real?"

"It's easy, just close your eyes and imagine yourself levitating in the air, or at least lifting off the ground."

Sean gave her another bedazzled look and she shook her head to him as he shook back in return. He began to shift his arms with clenched fist in front of him, prepping himself for leap. "Alright, I'll give it a try." He closed his eyes, took a deep breath, and imagined himself lifting off the ground, visualizing the experience the best he could with vivid effort. As he pushed forward, his mind relaxed and soon his feet began slowly escalating upward, hovering in the air like a bird embarking on its first flight. Sean looked down to the ground in amazement as he hovered nonchalantly in the air.

"Whoa, look I'm doing it! I'm really flying!" said Sean.

"I can see that," said Lily. Lily hopped off her cloud, situated herself in the airborne. "Alright, so we better get going, we don't want to be late than we already are." Sean started trying to boost himself up higher in the air but failed ultimately as he lost his balance, almost in a tripping motion. He wallowed forward; shifting his hand back and forth trying not to fall while Lily grabbed his hand just before any impact occurred.

"We don't have time for any practice. I'll have to hold your hand on the way there, since you can't fly yourself."

"That really sucks, I wanna learn to fly on my own," said Sean, grunting to himself.

“Maybe later, but enough talk, let’s get out of here.” She took his hand up in the air as she hovered to higher ground. They rose up through the air high, cascading the horizon as they flew off into the distance. Leaving no trails behind them, just a bare wasteland.

Chapter 2

The sun was restless as they glided through the sky, traveling at modest speeds as the city came into view across the distance.

“Is that it up ahead?” said Sean.

“Yep, shouldn’t be much longer now,” said Lily. “We should be able to make it just in time going at this speed.”

“What were you saying before, by the way? About this tournament and everything.”

“You’ll see when we get there. It’s too much to explain right now. We’re almost there...” They continued blasted through the air at modest to fast speeds, passing over prairies, plains, and lakes along the way. They each different shapes and sizes, some large, some round, cool, crystal light blue reflections shone through the clear transparent waterways just below them, each getting smaller and smaller as they shifted by the only for a brief second. The land below them looking like building blocks you could pluck up with a simple gesture of the hand. They came further into view as time passed and came just over the top of the city grounds. They looked down at the plot of land with caution.

“Ok, so from here...” Lily said, adjusting her weight and position, “we shall teleport our way in.”

“Teleport? How are we going to do that?” said Sean, perplexed.

“I have the ability to do that as well.” She further gripped his hand standing them both upright. “Hold on tight...” A flash of white energy encapsulated both them, and before they knew it, the emanating energy blipped them off in an instant, showing no signs of them being there before. The quiet sky stood still as the soft winds blew by in the skyline.

They traveled to what had felt lightning fast and suddenly appeared before an open hallway, void of any people or life, just silence and open space and narrow ways leading off to undiscovered spaces. “Looks, we made here ok.” Lily was wiping off her dress, shifting it back and forth to push out the wrinkles and folds. “All this air travel can really mess with my outfit.” Sean let go of her hand and began situating himself. He had been through so much already and tried to compose himself with all the flying, fighting, and plethora of information. He started looking around curiously, observing all the nooks and crannies of the room; all the corners didn’t escape his eyes as he looked around. Lights were all over the ceiling; opaque public building like architecture riddled each wall across each turn. It seemed like they were in some moderately important place to him, it looked like a fairly public space with the way the walls were built and the atmosphere it gave off to him through the lack of a family house feel you’d feel at home.

“That was pretty fun, so where are we anyway?” said Sean as he kept looking around. “This place doesn’t look like the arena.”

“It’s not...well at least not the main one exactly. Were at another arena, much smaller than this one. This is just the main office building placed right next to it. We’re here because I have someone for you to meet first.”

Sean continued looking around curiously, almost as if not paying attention. “Oh, I see...so we’re in another arena.”

“All right, let’s go. I got to get back to the Promised Land soon, so we can’t be wasting any more time.” Lily began walking forward and guided him down the hall. Sean followed with haste and began jogging forward to keep up with her fast pace. They came around a corner to find a much larger open space and a desk that looked like a main desk type of area. Windows could be seen beside it and across throughout the room along with an entrance doorway and a matt to match the furnishing. Bright lights lit up the room nicely and illuminated it fairly strong to create a casual public atmosphere surrounding them. But they weren’t the only ones there, behind the desk stood a rather tall, big black man, with sturdy shoulders and dark glasses. He wore himself a nice hat and semi casual outfit that still looked very formal enough to let you know he may be working here of some kind. The tall dark man noticed them coming around the corner and waved with a greeting fashion, signaling them to come over for initiating discourse. Sean and Lily walked over to the counter with haste.

“Hello there Mr. Francis, good morning to you,” said Lily bowing her head.

“Good morning to you too Lily, what brings you on over to these parts,” said the burly black man. “We’re not used to seeing too many angels over here that often.”

“I’m just here to drop off a delivery. You see this boy here needs assistance...” She pointed over to Sean in an introductory fashion

“Oh and who is this young fellow here?”

“This my good sir is Sean; he was a stray soul I found out in the woods. He’s said to be special in some way, but I don’t know why, I was just instructed to retrieve him upon arrival. We were hoping to sign him up for the tournament, that part was strict orders too.”

“Hmm, I see.” Mr. Francis looked over with a sharp look and inspected Sean. Sean couldn’t help but feel slightly embarrassed, but he stood still with a common smirk on his face until the burly man chose to speak again. “He certainly looks fairly fit, a little on the smaller side than most fighters, fairly skinny too. But we might be able to move him in.”

“That’s great news! Since your one of the main heads of the Committee I figured you’d be the perfect person to ask for permission for this. You Committee members are always having your hands full with managing the tournament that I was hoping you’d be here still with the whole preliminary rounds going on right now. I’m glad I got caught you before you left.” said Lily, in a very longwinded fashion.

“Yes, we are quite busy. We received a lot of fighters this time around; they must be really getting hasty for battle this time of year. I’m actually on break right now so I actually wanted to get some peace before I headed on over just as a bystander to see how it was going, but I’m in no rush to see it. I already got a look at the applicants and I got a good estimate on who’ll make it to the final rounds, so I’m in no rush to see it,” said Mr. Francis.

“Well I hope you can get him signed up before they end. This one looks pretty fired up for battle, I can feel it.” Lily waved over at Sean. “Don’t be wary Sean, you haven’t even said hello yet.” Sean’s face lit up as she instructed him to induce a proper greeting.

“Oh, I’m sorry my mistake.” Sean took a slight bow to Mr. Francis while maintaining eye contact to him over the counter. “Hello, to you sir. My name is Sean.”

“Good day to you too, my boy. You look mighty athletic for a boy your size, do you work out?”

“Well no...not really...maybe sometimes. I suppose I got it all from just fighting bullies on the streets so much.” Sean said, bashfully. “They weren’t all that strong usually, I guess that gave me a sort of workout every day.”

“Oh, we got ourselves a street boy, eh?” He reached his arm out to shake and Sean responded to the gesture and proceeded to shake back. “You’ll fit in nicely, my name is Albert D. Francis. I’m one of the only African Americans you’ll see around these parts. But don’t worry you’ll get to see a fair amount of us all ‘round here and the rest of the continent.” They let go of each other hands still facing each other.

“I see.” Sean began to stammer a little in his words. “That’s good to know, um sir. It’s nice to meet you.” Formalities weren’t his strong suit.

Mr. Francis made a slight chuckle in his voice. “You’re a strange one aren’t you? I like that. Might make this place a little more interesting ‘round here. It can get a little too peaceful sometimes y’know. Some days you need a little more excitement in your life, y’know what I’m saying?”

“Yes sir, I sure do.” Sean made a mild smile to him. “I know what exactly what you mean.” Sean wasn’t too sure really if he did or not, but he went along with what he was saying anyway, since he seemed like a pretty nice guy.

“Alright then should we head out? We won’t be making much progress standing around here,” said Mr. Francis.

“Yes, yes. You all should get going. I need to get back to my duties myself, so sadly I won’t be able to accompany you on your journey. Best of luck to you Sean.”

“Yeah, same here.” Sean waved goodbye to Lily as she rose up in the air and went straight into the wall, headfirst like a ghost, disappearing from the room in an instant like she was never there.

“Wow, she can really do that?” said Sean, with his mouth gaping wide staring at the ceiling.

“Yep, all angels can go through walls, there almost like ghosts in a way,” said Mr. Francis. He reached in his pocket and pulled out a big, burly cigar, one big enough that it looked like he could smoke it for ages, and he lit it up quick, sparking with yellow light and took a deep breath and exhaled smoke between his sturdy, dark fingers. “We can go but let me get my son Darion first. He’s lazing around in the back.” Mr. Francis turned around facing towards the wall behind him. A door came into view, which was a sudden surprise to Sean because he hadn’t beforehand while they were busy talking. “Darion, Darion. Get your ass out here boy, we gotta get up on out of here and head over to the stadium.” He knocked on the door hard enough to hear from the other side. After a while, the silence broke and the door opened to reveal a younger black male with a jacket on and similar black shades. He stumbled a bit through the door entrance before he situated and spoke.

“What up pops? What’s with the ruckus? Why you trippin’? I’m just chillin’ in the back, I ain’t doin’ nothin’ wrong, *Jesus*, I’m just listening to music...”

“Boy, don’t use that tone with me. We don’t talk like around here. I’m calling you cause we gotta go now. We have to escort this boy on over to the stadium.”

“Oh, I see.” Darion looked over at Sean across the counter causing him to smirk awkwardly a bit. “Wassup, the names Darion,” he said reaching out his hand over the counter towards Sean’s direction. “How’s it goin’ man?”

“I’m cool, the name’s Sean. Nice to meet you.”

“Same here.” They shook their hands a little longer before letting go and shifting around for their next course of action. “You knew here?” Darion said, gracefully.

“Yeah, I hardly know what’s going on actually. One minute I’m in a forest and some plains in the middle of nowhere, next minute I’m greeting you through the introduction of a supposed angel.” Sean chuckled at the words he just uttered. It flashed in his mind for real that he barely knew what was going on and he found it all amusing.

“Yeah it sounds like you’ve been having a crazy time, yo,” said Darion. “Don’t worry man, things will probably start making more sense for you in a few.”

“Ok.”

They began to lose some eye contact and started shuffling around their feet across making casual gestures to lighten the mood. Mr. Francis went into the lit room behind the counter and after a few moments came out flicking the light switch off behind him as he looked over at them both.

“Alright now, shall we go then?” said Mr. Francis. Both boys nodded and they shuffled their gear in place and Sean followed them as they stepped out of the counter and left out through the main entrance in unison.

Chapter 3

“I would like to start off this seminar as punctual and straight as I can today. We need to stand up better for women’s rights. We need to make a difference and end all this sexist nonsense now.” A medium sized man stood tall at a podium in a conference room, eyes all across the gargantuan room faced toward him with great intent. People stood on each side seated in the chairs as he spoke more inspiring words, nodding and coughing as the atmosphere took its course in the silent setting.

“I’ve met with several clients the other day, all women who have gone through much stress with abusive and unfaithful men in their lives, two beaten and one disrespected for her roles as a women and daily life activities. They all came to me for counsel relatively the same day, the first two crying their eyes out while the other didn’t shed a tear but needed somebody to let off steam and express her thoughts and anger to readily,” the leading man said. “These women are but a small representation of countless individual women who are tired of the general rule of man and wish to freely express themselves and do what they wish without the control of man dictating what they can or cannot do. We all need to work together, as men and women, and push to move forward as a collective to equality and peace for all. We need to respect each other and everyone equally.” The man stood still at the podium with a casual look on his face, having his hands up toward his audience as he spoke his true words. The crowd on each side stood stiff and stared back at the man with much intensity, soon after a mini clap was heard in the background leading them on to semi-applause, lifting the rooms atmosphere and lightening the stark mood.

“We’ve been on this planet too long to be treating our own kind this way, both Earth and Other Earth. We need to start making a difference for both genders and we need to do it now.”

A silence struck the room once more. One man began to raise his hand up which triggered the man standing at the podium notice and call on him. “Sir Noah, if I may call you that, I whole-heartedly agree on our stance for continuing the support for woman’s but I would like to personally ask as new member here at the PHD Department, on how we intend to pursue such endeavors, what’s our next course of action?”

The man with a white coat at the podium now with a name shuffled in his pocket closing his eyes as he brought out a lighter and a cigarette. His white coat was bright and strong, it resembled the aesthetic of a lab coat, and it had pasted on the side the words, *PHD*, and his coat stood huddled strong over his shoulder as he put his finger up to answer.

“I’m glad you asked that, and I welcome you as a new member of the PHD Department. I have a number of ideas and things on what we could do to move our plans forward in the world, starting in Main City. We can start by initiating speeches and protests in public, they may be a little controversial but it’ll get us on the right track for change among the general public. We can also schedule meetings and visits at our local schools. We can try to meet with students and discuss to them why sexism is wrong, and try to coach them how to prevent sexual assault for both genders and try to teach them about self-control in a relationship and encourage safe sex. There’s also rallies we could coordinate and any other social gatherings with the general public and public officials in order to try to actively reach the general public on a personal level with these issues because at the end of the day that is the root of the problem and social problems like sexism won’t stop unless we communicate directly to the people. If the people don’t change then nothing will change.”

A strong silence stood in the air for a moment until an early clapping sounded the plethora of many claps to come after. The men and women stood tall and strong as each person’s hands roared together with forward in the audience. Their hands slowly began to cease as the man who initiated his question began to situate and open his mouth.

“I see then, those sound like splendid methods to partake in, Noah sir. I cannot wait to get started,” said the curious man.

Yes, I’m glad you are,” said Noah while smoking his cigarette, “we’ve been actually doing most of these methods already, but you wouldn’t have known that if your new of course, unless you’ve attending one of our events or rallies.”

“I’ve heard about many in the papers.”

“I see, then that’s good news.”

Noah took a whiff of his cigarette and looked up at the crowd before. The people stood staring with casual attention at him. He blew out a wad of smoke into the air and looked upon the crowd once more.

“Alright then, it looks like we’re coming to a close. That about wraps things up I’d say. We will meet again next month to discuss our plans in more detail about any major events towards our feminist’s endeavors. For now return back to your posts and departments. We will meet again during the scheduled time, meeting adjourned.”

The people in the surrounding area moved and travelled along the walkways out the room, the room became empty and white with vastness, cascading lights shot off the bright walls and tile based floorboards. Noah stood at the center of the podium shuffling his paperwork and started treading toward the door casually as he peeked at his surroundings for trash and leftover belongings. As he walked out the main entrance he looked to his left to find man standing there as if awaiting his leave. Noah stood there stoic turning to him as the man shifted his eyes to him and began to say his opening sentence.

“Thought you’d never leave,” said the man.

“I was just making sure no one left any stuff behind, you know how these meetings go sometimes, people get caught up in their schedules forgetting trash and belongings all the time. So what’s up?” Noah responded. They began walking down the corridor hallway in unison.

“Oh, I just wanted to know if you wanted to watch the rest of the preliminaries after work. They’re almost over now and I wanted to see if we can catch a few matches before it’s over.”

“Oh, for the tournament you mean, yes I know it’s still going on. They’re about ready to clear up the last applicants. I’m not too sure really, I have one more client for the day to meet with after this meeting was over with.”

“C’mon, it’ll only be for a second. I heard they gathered a great batch of fighters for this year, it’ll be get to see some new talent in the ring, they even got a good batch of female fighters this year.”

“Yes, I know. I’ve actually entered the tournament myself, me along with my brother. We carried out our fights and won earlier this week. I saw a fair amount of good female fighters in the ring as well winning matches.”

“See, it’s gonna be great, I just know the rest of the fighters won’t let us down. We may even see something special happen this year.”

“What do you mean by that?”

“I’m saying that we may see some special fighters this year, I’m telling you I have a hunch something really good’s gonna happen.”

“Uh huh,” Noah said casually.

“I’m telling you man, something great’s gonna happen this year. And haven’t you heard, it supposedly might be a Special Year this year. That means that whole Spirit Disciple guy might show up.”

“You mean that guy from the legend?”

“Yeah, yeah, The Legend of Good and Evil. If the legend is true he’ll have to beat his evil counterpart in a fight and be trained by Master Shin to get there. I really wanna be there if he shows up. We might get to see a few surprises from him.”

Noah stop walking while putting his finger on his head with his eyes closed. He stood there with his eyes closed intensely, straining the folds in his face as he tried to focus on a decision. “Hmm, I don’t know. I’ve already been there once and already predicted most of the outcome this year, my brothers busy training at the gym so we we’re both pretty settled on our results after our matches, so we didn’t think we needed to go back to see anymore matches, but if you insist I’ll see what I can do after I meet with this client.”

“You will? Aw, man that’s great to hear. You won’t regret it, I know you’ll love it once we get there, I’m tellin’ you man something grand’s gonna happen this year.”

“Yeah, yeah. Save the cheering for the preliminaries.”

The two men continued down the hall until they reached a crossroad pertaining to two directions. Their feet halted simultaneously as they stood to face each other.

“Alright, then. I’ll be waiting outside for you when you’re ready. I’ll just go on ahead then. See you when you’re ready.”

“Alright.” The man walked off as Noah waved him temporary goodbye, shifting his feet with his hands placed in his coat pockets he began to walk off in the opposing corridor. As his feet echoed in the screeching hallway he came across a human figure straight ahead of his view standing near a doorway. A woman with a sophisticated air to her demeanor stood standing before the doorway, she turned slow towards him as he came further into view, their eyes locked as he came close enough and his next conversation started before he knew it.

“Good evening, Noah.”

“Hello, Ms. Williams. What can I do for you today?”

“Oh, nothing special. I just wanted to congratulate you today for your excellent speech on feminism as always. You really did an excellent job today.”

“Why thank you, that’s very kind of you.”

“What are your plans for the rest of the day?” she said.

“Well, I’ve seemed to have a change of plans as of late. After this client I’m about to meet with I’m going to see the rest of the preliminaries with a friend. We’re going to oversee the last bit of talent the competition has left,” Noah said.

“You mean that wretched tournament, fighting barbarically like that is a fools game. I hardly see any reason to go there,” Ms. Williams said

“Hey, it’s not a completely barbaric setting. A lot of well-rounded and smart people attend and participate in the event, with myself included this year.”

“You’re participating in it?” Ms. Williams said with disdain.

“Yes, my brother Adam and I. We’ll be participating if we make the cut that is, we’ve already won our matches for the preliminaries awhile back.

“Why would you want to participate in such a vile sporting event?”

“We have our reasons. I plan to partake on this tournament to further progress my philanthropic endeavors, and the rumored prize of making it to the Promised land for one wish sounds enlightening, although I don’t really care much for the wish itself,” said Noah. “I plan to make a difference and this feels to me on the way how.”

“I see...well I can’t stop you but I simply revile whatever that sporting event has to offer.”

“Well, that’s fine, you don’t have to like the tournament if you don’t want too. Well, all right then I need to get to my client now so I can get going. I don’t want to keep my friend waiting too long.”

“But, of course. They’re right inside. And thank you again on your excellent discourse on feminism.”

“No problem, we’ll get on the rallies and protests later in the month, for now let’s carry on with our own duties.”

“Alright, thank you.”

“Thank you.”

The woman turned around and began walking in the opposite direction of Noah’s eyesight; she soon disappeared around the corner as he walked through the doorway entering his office.

Chapter 4

The three men walked with along the cement sidewalk, huddled together in a group as their eyes guided looking around. Tall buildings and street signs of all sorts cluttered the area. Mr. Francis stood walking at the front end of their group, leading them on as Darion and Sean followed. He walked frantically along the sidewalk pointing to different sites and buildings along the way.

“This is Main City, the central city of the Mainland. I guess you could see this as the capital of Moder and Other Earth. This is centralized area where most people live.”

Sean looked around as he pointed and spoke with awe, his mouth opened wide at any sight that amazed him in some way.

“Wow, this place is great. This is nothing like what I’m used too.”

“What are you more used too, boy?”

“Me? I was very poor growing up. I’m used to living in very low income communities, places like this are like a dream to me.”

“I see, well don’t you fret we have our share of low income environments. We have a fair amount of homeless and poor people in this city, but mostly our government, The Republic, financially forces them to be in what is called the Poverty District. It’s a place where many poor people live and struggle every day. It’s more like they don’t have too many options of other places to live because they can’t afford it, and the biggest demographic in that district is African Americans, there are plenty of other races struggling there too though,” said Mr. Francis.

“Wow that sounds harsh, I’m not black but I feel for them. I certainly can empathize with what they’re going through,” said Sean.

“You don’t say? Well don’t worry that area isn’t the only place you’ll be seeing us black folks, like I said there be plenty of them runnin’ ‘round these parts, right Darion.”

“Right, pops,” said Darion with his hands around the back of his head, “we got lots of them around here, and they’re usually pullin’ in much higher incomes than the other ones. The cost of living can be quite expensive in these parts. My dad and I just barely pull through sometimes with our jobs,” said Darion.

Sean kept looking around the boisterous city with wonder. “... You don’t say...” Sean said.

“Hey, are you listening to us boy?” said Mr. Francis.

“What? Oh, yeah I hear you, sorry I’m just so amazed at this place is all, it’s so big and huge, I still can’t believe I’m at a place like this,” said Sean.

“Well, I’m glad you like it but don’t be too amazed, you have yet to see the good stuff this place has to offer,” said Mr. Francis.

They kept walking down the road until they met with crosswalk. Cars and streetlights were booming everywhere. Pedestrian’s feet stomped strong on the concrete. Pets and animals lashed around on their leashes. The city was rich with life and grace. They crossed a street to reach a big, open plaza. Park style grass areas lay on the sides of the concrete, large fountains cascaded waterfalls of water that illuminated the area. Benches riddled the area with a plethora of people at each seat, strong gusts of wind flowed through the air as they entered into the middle portion of the area. They walked past the fountains as the strong winds blew in their face.

“Now as we come through this nice scenery, I wanted to give you a little history lesson of this here place, Sean, more like an explanation of the world you’re in right now,” said Mr. Francis.

Sean diverted his attention partially over to him, his eyes widened a little bit at the curiosity he gained from his question.

“Yeah, why not. I’ve been meaning to ask you about this place, give me the lowdown.”

“All right then, well this here planet of ours is called Other Earth, I’m sure that there angel you met before named Lily already told you that much,” said Mr. Francis.

“Yep, she sure did,” said Sean.

“Well did she tell you about this here continent and the origins of our country name?”

“Yeah, I think she did but I wouldn’t mind a little refresher to jog my memory.”

Mr. Francis took a deep breath and exhaled with strong force. “Well this here continent again is called Neo-Pangaea, it’s a sort of newer form of the old one back on the regular Earth.

Sean nodded his back and forth in his direction as they continued to walk. “Yeah, yeah, I got that part.”

“And this country of ours is called Moder, pronounced mod-er not mode-er or anything else like that.”

“Really, why is it called that?”

“Because it is named after the word *mother*, the people chose this word because it resembles Mother Nature and just seemed like a good fit.” Mr. Francis took another huge whiff out of his cigar and blew it in the air. “I think it’s a fine name, although it can be very tricky to say sometimes.”

“Oh, I see. Yeah, sure that sounds great.”

“I’m sure you would. Now you see this country is split up into different areas, five zones to be exact. We call them the Zones of Territory. These are our separate divisions so to speak of the country, kind of like states.”

Sean continued to nod his head. “Ok.”

“Now each of these five zones each has a name of their own, the Mountain Zone, the Ice Zone, the Air Zone, the Industrial Zone, and the Prehistoric Zone. Each of these zones set a different population and certain type of people and animals. They’re very exclusive but we do our best still to live in unison and keep peace, that’s what the flag is for but I’ll get to that later when we get there.”

Sean looked perplexed. “What flag?”

“You’ll see when we get there. Anyway, so these different zones divide our nation and we try to keep friendly relations between to uphold peace. Each of these zones also represents a different type of spirit energy.”

“Spirit energy?” said Sean confused.

“Yes, spirit energy. It’s a mystical kind of energy only found here in this world. I guess that little angel girl didn’t have time to tell you about it. We use spirit energy harnessed from the Earth for everything as power and energy on this planet. We use it for our machines, phones, devices, and other technology all throughout here. It’s a renewable resource that never exhausts waste, so we don’t have to worry about greenhouse effect problems or anything like that happening now on Earth,” said Mr. Francis.

“Wow, that sounds amazing! This place sounds like some kind of dream world, can’t believe I ended up here after I died.”

“Yes it sounds nice, but you should still savor your time on Earth. Don’t be doing nothing crazy like committing suicide just to end up here, life’s too sacred for that kind of nonsense, y’know. You’ll get here when it’s your time.”

“Yes, sir I understand.”

“Now where was I? Oh, so basically spirit energy is a renewable resource here and we can use it infinitely to power all our technology and electronics. It also encompasses the air around us and even in space; it’s a very strange substance to say the least. Our scientists are doing their very best to analyze and study it the best they can. They’re discovering new things about spirit energy each day as we speak.”

“Man, that sounds really cool.”

Sean’s eyes lit up with excitement as they continued walking. As they continued chatting a loud noise burst from a faraway distance. A huge thundering noise came roaring at them as they had too little time to react. It continued to roar like a buzzing engine until its blasting noise became loud enough to discern from their voices. A little boy on a bike was buzzing at full speed on what looked like some type of automobile blasting straight at them.

“Hey, watch out!” said the car-blasting boy.

“Whoa, what’s that?” said Sean.

“You might want to get out the way!” yelled Darion.

The automobile shot right past them as they leapt out of the way from the impact. The automobile’s speed subsided as the boy riding halted it strong by shifting it sideways in a hard turning motion trying to park it in place as fast as he could. It stopped sharp and the boy wearing a baseball cap backwards looked up at them as they recovered their focus and looked toward him to discover the culprit of their sudden shock.

“Sorry about that,” the boy said, “this thing can go out of control sometimes. I’m still trying to fix the engine, and I’m still pretty new to riding this thing.”

“Jeez, man you almost ran us over. You should really watch where you’re driving that thing,” said Darion rubbing his head.

“My bad, like I said I’m really sorry for that,” the boy said again.

“No worries, I was just talking about this very thing. And now you’ve come along and now I can introduce this to Sean. Sean, can you please check out th—”

Sean’s eyes gleamed with sparkling energy. He stared at the automobile like he had witnessed the opportunity to see a shiny, new trophy. He ducked up and down while turning to look at it in every direction he could.

“Wow, what is this? This looks so cool!” said Sean in wonder.

The boy laughed. “You like it? It’s my new air bike. I just got it a few days ago.”

Sean continued looking at it with excitement. “Air bike? Really? That sounds really awesome what’s an air bike and what’s it do?”

“It’s a type of bike not from around these parts, I got it from the Industrial Zone. You must not be from around these parts, I can tell,” said the boy.

“Nope, I’m new here. I just died today.”

“You don’t say? Well, welcome to the town, it’s always great to get new people here all the time.”

Sean looked down again at the bottom wheel area. “Hey, what’s this? There aren’t any wheels here? How does it drive?”

“Oh, that? That’s because it’s a hover bike. It can fly through the air and take me wherever I want it too,” said the boy.

“Really, how does it do that?” said Sean.

“It does it through wind energy,” said the boy.

“Wind energy? I think I’ve heard something like that before, or wait I thought it was spirit energy Mr. Francis was telling me about?” said Sean

“That’s precisely right,” Mr. Francis interrupted, “that bike uses what is called wind energy to ride it. It’s a type of spirit energy.”

“Really? That sounds pretty cool,” said Sean.

“That’s right it is cool. But the best part is how it uses the wind energy,” said the boy with enthusiasm, “the wheel area uses the wind energy embedded inside to manipulate the air around it and thrust the bike forward and back, with the help of these handles and the exhaust pipes in the back, of course.”

“Wow, so it’s like having little invisible air wheels right here?” asked Sean.

“Yeah, more or less. You can stock up on wind energy at a station for a price, so using fuel for gas is no different here than it is on Earth, just the type of fuel is completely different from that place,” said the boy.

“Man, that’s really cool!” said Sean.

“Yeah, it is isn’t it?” said the boy smiling.

They continued chatting away about more details on the bike and it’s composition, until they heard a huge thud bang against the bike. The boy looked over to the other side and found a big red ball bouncing on impact at the foot area. A little black boy came running in from the distance and looked at the bike owner’s eyes with a deep childlike stare before he had a chance to pick it up. The biker boy laughed as he reached for the ball and extended his hand out to the boy with a big illuminated grin on his face.

“I think this is yours little guy,” said the biker boy, “you might want to be careful where you’re playing with this, you might get hurt if you’re not too careful.”

The boy didn’t say a word as he gave him the ball. He took it with ease and then closed his eyes with a huge innocent smile on his face as he looked up at the biker kid. A tall figure was heard running towards the boy and the group. It was a woman, a tall black woman with casual clothes and attire, she ran up to them gasping a little out of breath as she wrapped her arms around the boy’s shoulders and looked at group bowing her sporadically at them.

“I’m so sorry, I hope he didn’t bother you. My son was just playing with his ball but he sometimes runs off with it when I’m not looking. I lose track of him sometimes, I can sometimes be a bit inattentive,” the woman said catching her breathe.

“Oh, it’s no problem, really,” said the biker boy.

“Yeah, it’s ok, it’s not biggie. We weren’t doing anything important, just chatting about his bike is all. He didn’t bother us one bit,” said Sean.

“Oh, that’s good to hear.” The young black woman bent over toward the boy’s face to meet him at eye level, she placed her soft hands over his cheeks, which made the boy smile even more as he held onto his red ball. “Sweetie, are you alright? You’re not hurt anywhere are you?”

The boy continued smiling at her and then proceeded to just utter baby gibberish and simple words to her as she wrapped her arms further around him and pulled him in tight while rubbing his back.

“I’ll never let you out of my sight again. Ok let’s go now, we don’t want to bother the people anymore.”

She stood up to face them and took another bow in front of their presence. “I’m so sorry about this, I promise it won’t happen again, we’ll try to be more careful next time.”

“No it’s no problem at all, really,” said the biker boy.

“Well, we’ll be off now. Sorry for the inconvenience.” She took the boy by the hand and then looked down at him pointing at the group of boys. “Say, goodbye to the nice people.” The little black boy retained his innocent smile throughout and waved his tiny hand back and forth at them as they walked off leaving the Sean’s group in a matter of minutes. They staggered around looking at each other as they left and Sean’s face lit up a little as he faced the biker kid.

“Well, that was nice. He seemed like a nice kid, the townsfolk here seem to be pretty nice people and the diversity seems to be strong as well,” said Sean.

They soon transitioned topics and Sean’s face lit up with excitement once again as he stared at the bike with intense grace and wonder.

“Can I take it for a spin? I really want to try riding one of these!” said Sean.

“Sure, but only for a little while, I’m still trying to learn the ropes of it myself,” said the boy.

Darion stepped in upon hearing Sean’s impulsive statement. “No, we can’t, we don’t have time. We still have to get you signed up for the tournament, remember? We don’t have time for this.”

Sean looked him with intense dismay. His face flushed with disdain as he clenched his fists in tight. “What, why not? It’ll only be for a second.”

“No, Darion’s right. We have to keep going, boy. You’ll be late for registration, and I need to be there as your voucher to get you in,” said Mr. Francis.

Sean looked at him and let out a huge sigh. “Fine...”

“My bad, bro. Maybe next time if I ever see you again, or maybe you’ll get your own someday,” He got back on his bike and began to start the engine for take-off. “Good luck in the tournament, I hope you make it so I can watch you battle in the ring, you seem like a cool guy.”

“Yeah, same here. I hope we see each other again!” said Sean.

They waved at each other as the boy lifted his retro bike in the air and blasted it off in the distance, disappearing as if he were never here. The group looked at each other as the engine noise dissipated in their eyes, Mr. Francis turned and began to walk forward with a haste housed in his demeanor.

“Alright then let’s go we don’t want to be late now do we?”

Chapter 5

Noise began to burst in all directions as the Sean's group began to approach a tall, rough building. They walked across dark brick road as Mr. Francis continued to lead them on towards the large building. They halted when the entrance came further into view and Mr. Francis turned around facing Darion and Sean with a blunt face.

"Alright, we're about here. We're about to enter Main Hall, the central building of the Millennial Tournament," said Mr. Francis.

Sean looked up at the tall building. His eyes squinted in as he took a long stare at how tall it actually was. He wasn't good at measurements so he just labeled it in his mind as a really tall building.

"Whoa, it's huge. So wait...the Millennial Tournament? I don't think I remember it being called that," said Sean perplexed.

"Oh, right. I don't think we ever told you the name," Darion added, "the stadium we're going to is called Main Arena and the tournament we're participating for with these preliminaries is called the Millennial Tournament. The fighters this year aren't too bad this time around and I would know since this year I'm serving as announcer for the tournament."

"Wow, really? That's pretty cool," said Sean.

"Yeah. I expect some good talent coming out of these preliminaries," said Darion.

"But, wait. Why is it called the Millennial Tournament?" Sean asked.

"Well, that's a long story but basically it's like a celebration for a founding of our planet. The tournament is held every one thousand years in commemoration of that and serves as a sort of national holiday for the whole country."

"Wow, that sounds really important. I didn't know something like that existed here."

"Yeah, it's pretty sweet. It also serves as a symbol for using the Star Medals and possibly getting a chance for your team to make one wish and go to the Promised Land."

Sean face flashed with confusion. He bobbed his head to side while straining his mind at to what he just heard from him. "Hmm, wait what? What's all that? One wish? Promised Land? Star Medals? I don't get it, unfortunately."

"I didn't expect you too. My pops and I will explain it more inside, let's go already, before you're late any more than you already are."

"Ok, will do," said Sean.

"You boy's done chattin' it up? We gotta get goin' now," Mr. Francis said, waving his cigar too them in a follow him motion.

“Yeah, we heard you,” Darion responded.

The walked forward until they reached the sliding doors of the tall building and entered in without time to waste.

The group entered into the building to witness people of different types and races all walking in different directions and areas. Voices roared from every direction and they echoed far and wide throughout the enclaves of every corner of the building. A desk stood far to the side of the entrance that housed a several receptionist standing stiff in wait. Mr. Francis turned around to them as they entered the building and pointed his finger towards the wall on the opposite end of the reception desk view.

“Darion, you can go on over there and tell him about those there symbols on the whole since those will be important to tell him about before he enters the tournament if just so happens to win the preliminaries. I’m heading over here to the reception desk to get him signed up since he’s I’m part of the tournament committee and none of you here youngsters would be able to talk his way into the tournament on your own anyway,” said Mr. Francis.

“Alright, pops, will do. I’ll give him the run down over here,” said Darion.

Sean’s eyes wandered like curious little animal around the room. Darion’s fingers snapped near his face as he reacted to them noise and looked Darion into the eyes of his dark shades.

“Hey, man, you listening? Come over here for a sec. I’m going to show you something.”

“What? Oh, Alright then.”

They walked over to this colossal, straight burly wall. Three massive square figures stood against it in order from left to right like exotic paintings on display. Darion began pointing at the figure to the far left and Sean proceeded to follow his finger as he observed the figure’s contents.

“This thing right here is called the Sacred Holy Trinity. You could just call it the Holy Trinity for short. It’s meant to represent very sacred and holy relics that were founded in this world,” said Darion.

Sean looked up at the huge figure hanging from the wall in glass casing. He saw three rings interlocked together in a triangle shape fashion. The figure had a mosaic style design to it. Each ring had a different symbol placed within it, a silver cross at top, a red pentagram star on the bottom left, and a yin yang style symbol without the extra small circles on the inside of both ends that we’re usually apart of the original design, the two opposing colors on each piece we’re blue and black.

“What are those symbols on the inside of the rings? They look familiar to me because they resemble a few religious symbols I’ve seen before back on Earth,” said Sean.

“Those are representations of what’s called the Sacred Relics. They’re sacred and holy symbols that have been discovered by the founders of our universe. Some people think it’s a legend because we haven’t seen or met them but apparently it’s rumored by the people that there are separate dimensions out there and that there are rulers ruling over each realm. Their job is also to protect each respective relic from harms way and they serve as sort of guardians of those respective relics and places,” said Darion.

Sean’s eyes wandered across the figure and then halted and switched over to Darion’s eyesight. “I see, so then what are these so called different worlds called then?”

“There both called the Promised Land and the Underworld. Those are the other two at least, were living currently in one of them right now. I guess you could call this one the Spirit World or just Other Earth, which is a part of the Spirit World, but sometimes that gets confusing

because it feels like wouldn't the Promised Land and the Underworld be a part of the Spirit World too, y'know?"

"Yeah that makes sense," Sean responded.

"Anyways the names of each of these relics are called the Silver Cross, the Red Star Symbol, and the Duality Symbol, which I'll get to in a second with the next one."

"Ok."

So, yeah, the point is these symbols are very sacred and the people here worship this plaque with great respect so be careful when your referring to these objects and this sacred symbol, you got that?

"Ok, right."

"By the way, I didn't tell you what these all are called together, they're called the Ancient Symbols. We call 'em that because there already ancient, sacred symbols that represent our nation as a whole and we really put them all in high regard."

"All right, I see," said Sean nodding his head forward.

"Ok, that was the Sacred Holy Trinity, now on to the next one." Darion moved over a step and followed to point his hand to the middle-hanging figure. "This one here is called the Legend of Good and Evil, it also goes by the name of the Duality Scroll or just the Duality Symbol itself."

Sean's attention shifted towards the middle figure. "Ok, so what's it mean?"

"Well what it means or represents is a couple things. This symbol here in the middle of the scroll is called the Duality Symbol, that's what I mentioned here before. It's supposed to represent the balance between natural spirit energy and dark energy."

"Spirit and dark energy? I thought there was only spirit energy?"

"No, no. Weren't you paying attention before? That kid explained to you how his car ran on what's called wind energy. There are different versions of spirit energy than just the regular kind."

"Oh, then what are all the different types of spirit energy then?"

"I don't have time to run through all that with you right now, someone will tell you later about it. For now let's worry about just this explanation."

"Ok."

"So yeah, basically natural spirit energy and dark energy seem to work hand to hand and in unison to each other."

"All right, I see but why is that?" Sean asked.

"Nobody knows," Darion responded, it just seems to be a natural occurrence in the world.

Sean proceeded to further investigate the scroll. He spotted a small drawing of two bird like figures clashing at beak point, Sean's focused on the picture and squinted his eyes a tad to make out the picture of if he was seeing right.

"What's this, then?" Sean asked curiously.

"That my friend is the dove and the raven. It's the representation of the good and evil portion. The Dove represents good and the raven represents evil, obviously." Darion turned from Sean and looked back over to the scroll's view. "These symbols represent balance and reveals the question whether good or evil will prevail or not."

Sean turned his eyes to him again. "So then, what does it all mean, I mean as a whole?"

"It means that there's a constant struggle over good and evil, and this scroll represents a legend of two fighters coming to other one day every few thousand years to train for a fight over who's better and whether good or evil will rule the universe. That's what my pops told me

anyway. Those supposed Sacred Guardians I was talking about earlier decide who gets the most control of the universe this way.”

“Wow, that sounds interesting!”

“It is, and like I said two fighters are destined to come to Other Earth test their skills and eventually challenge each other to a fight. This tournament is a good battle ground for them to hone their skills together and afterwards their supposedly meant to succeed the previous Sacred Guardians’ positions as well.”

“Hmm, if that’s all true then what are these two fighters called and who are they?” asked Sean.

“They’re supposedly called the Spirit Disciple and the Demon Heir. The Spirit Disciple succeeds both Spirit Master and Guardian of the Promised Land and the Demon Heir succeeds the Demon King position, those guys I mentioned are the ones that live and rule the Promised Land and the Underworld, besides the Spirit Master of course who lives here on this planet with us,” said Darion.

“So, who’s the Spirit Master then?”

“He’s the head honcho of the planet. The protector of Other Earth and the strongest man on the planet, he’s also the guy who mastered all Spirit Energy or so I’ve heard.”

Sean’s face flushed with amazement. “Wow, he sound’s really important. I sure wish I could meet him.”

“I’d like to meet him as well, but you just might get your chance, I heard he might have left his sanctuary to watch the preliminaries today. Who knows what kind of stuff may happen today. Anyways let’s move on to the last one.”

“All right.”

Darion took a step further to the side and looked up again with his dark glasses, pointing towards what looked like a blue flag on the wall. That flag stood strong and had stars organized in the center of it, there we’re five stars all huddled with an Olympic game style design with three stars on top and two stars on the bottom just between each star. The stars had each of their own color being: red, blue, green, all on top from left to right and gold and silver stars placed under the other three. Darion pointed his finger towards stars and turned his face toward Sean.

“This here is called the 5 Star Flag, it’s the national flag of our country, continent, and nation of Moder, Neo-Pangaea, and Other Earth. These stars and this flag are very important to our country. They represent the zones themselves and the unity between them.”

“Ok.”

“Each star represents the five elements of nature and the respective zones of this country that represents them. The five basic elements of spirit energy again are fire, water, nature, electricity, and wind, and their matching zones are again the Prehistoric, Ice, Mountain, Industrial, and Air zones. These zones and elements represent our nation as a whole and are a direct reflection of nature itself. And those spirit energy types I mentioned before are the most common spirit energy types among spirit users.”

Sean began to bog his head to the side then he lifted it back and stared down the flag with his hand on his chin with perplexed look on his face.

“Hmm, I don’t know if I fully understand it yet. And what’s this thing about spirit users?”

“Oh, I guess we didn’t explain it before, so basically certain special people can use spirit energy in their bodies, most people can’t but some can based on a lot of complicated things I don’t have time to explain right now. But, basically certain people can use spirit energy to fight but most people can’t use base spirit energy to fight straight from their bodies. Spirit energy is

really hard to control and master, so in order to do that people here have made these things called Spirit Weapon's from the properties of Other Earth so we can use them to fight and protect ourselves, they're just like regular weapons made by people back on Earth except their stronger and more durable thanks to spirit energy."

"I see, I think I'm getting it now." Sean said relieved.

"Good, because I wanted to get back on topic. So, fighters channel their spirit energy within their weapons so they can use them for battle and with that like I said before basic elemental types most people get are fire, water, nature, wind, and electricity. So be prepared for that if you make it in the ring."

"Right."

"Now back to what I was saying, these stars represent the unity of our nation and with these stars standing here on this flag we hope to live in harmony between nations and strive towards gaining world peace. That's the main message of this flag. If we're all going to be stuff on this planet and continent together then we might as well get along, y'know?"

"I see, world peace. That sounds real nice, I'd like to see that one day."

"Don't we all, so yeah that it's these are the three Ancient symbols of our nation Moder of the continent Neo-Pangaea that resides on Other Earth. These are the most important symbols you should know if you're planning to stay here."

"All right, I got it," Sean nodded.

"The front of the flag is colored with a medium blue and the back end here is colored in black." Darion grabbed the flag and showed Sean both ends of each side. He took a step back in which Sean followed to get a clear view of the three symbols all together.

"The Ancient Symbols as a whole reflect the ideals of the people and from left to right each symbol represents unity, balance, and harmony. The Sacred Holy Trinity represents unity between worlds, the Legend of Good and Evil and the Duality symbol represent balance between elements, and the Five Star Flag of our nation represents harmony among nations and the ideals for achieving world peace. Hopefully with the help of these symbols, something like world peace will be able to be reached someday and won't be only a dream," said Darion.

"Yeah, that'd be pretty great. World peace sounds like a great idea for everyone, all this fighting and killing is pointless. People should only fight each other for sport, fun, or self-defense." Sean faced towards the symbols on the wall and took his hands in for a prayer stance and bowed over towards the symbols. He came up and then opened his eyes facing toward Darion.

"World peace shouldn't be a dream, it should be a reality," Sean said gracefully looking at him. "There's no reason for pointless violence, even though I love to fight a lot myself, I never do it to hurt innocent people. I just do it for sport or to fight against bullies."

"Well, yeah. Tupac for instance fought a lot for change, but it'll be up to us as people to see what'll happen there."

Sean's face brightened with excitement. "Oh, you're a Tupac fan too! I'm a huge fan of him!"

Darion laughed upon hearing him. "Man, of course I am. Tupac's been a huge influence on black people and all races as a whole. He's been a huge inspiration for all of us, no matter what ethnicity or race," said Darion.

"Yeah, he's my favorite music artists. His music is so moving and relatable, it really helps you get through the day during rough times," said Sean

“Yeah, well anyways, let’s save that conversation for another day, we should probably get going now, let’s check back with my dad.”

“Yeah, alright.”

The boy’s both turned around and walked towards the main desk area, halfway there they met with Mr. Francis and he stood there still with his cigar still lit up like a star as he blew dark shrouds of smoke back in the air.

“You boys ready?” Mr. Francis said with a smirk on his face.

“Yeah, we’re all set,” Darion responded.

“I’m ready to go too,” Sean followed.

“Well all right then, let’s get you to the equipment room,” said Mr. Francis.

Mr. Francis took his cigar into his hands and walked forward towards a straight hallway, Sean and Darion walked behind him as they both disappeared from the lobby entrance without a trace.

“Now this here is the room where you can pick your weapon of choice!” Mr. Francis huddled the boys at a barren doorway in the middle of that hall. He opened it and walked as they followed and saw rows and lines of weaponry all cascading throughout the room. Different wooden swords, gloves, and other weaponry hung from threads, hooks, nails and cupboards. Different labels of many kinds scattered across room all highlighting a different weapon type in each row. Sean looked at Mr. Francis with an eager look on his face as his face gasped with energy and joy upon viewing the beautiful sight he witnessed before. “This is the main locker room for the fighters to pick their weapon of combat, or at least one of them anyway. They have other locker rooms scattered across the building where the other fighters are, I figured this one would be good so we could have some privacy and you could get a chance to get comfortable and look around,” said Mr. Francis.

“Man, this place is insane! There are so many different types!” Sean said excited. He walked toward random weapons and started observing them from each angle and side, picking them up to hold in his hand for a moment and then placed it back when he was satisfied. “Wow, this place is like a dream come true for any fighter!”

Yeah, well don’t get too excited about these,” Darion interrupted, “these are just your basic standard weapons, simple training tools used for the preliminaries of the tournament. There not meant to be taken too seriously, there used so that each fighter can fight on equal turf during the preliminaries, that way no one has any major advantages over the other.”

“Oh, I see. Well they’re still pretty cool though.” Sean continued to look around in amazement, grabbing different weapons as if he were window-shopping. Darion turned around towards his dad and said a few words and walked towards the door turning back a little towards Sean on the way. “Well, I’m heading out now. I’ll go replace the announcer for the rest of the matches to give him a rest; I could use the practice anyway. See you later Sean, I’ll see you in the ring when you’re ready.”

“All right, yeah. I’ll see you,” Sean responded. They both waved at each other and Darion walked out the door in a flash. Mr. Francis turned to him as he kept browsing through the training weapon artillery. “Now I’m about to head on out too, but take your time you have a few matches before you’re ready to head out in the ring. I set you up to be the final preliminary match of the day, you’ll be one of the last contestants to go out there and fight,” said Mr. Francis.

“Ok, that’s fine,” Sean responded not looking back at him. “Oh, I think I like these! Sean took down a random pair of gloves from a hook stationed right in front of him, he turned it around casually to look at each side.”

“So you think you’d like to use gloves, eh?”

“Yeah, I love fighting hand-to-hand, gloves would just perfect for me.” Sean began to try them on and the fit him nicely as he gripped the inside and shifted his hand back and forth, clasping in and out to get comfortable with the fit.

“Well, those will work just fine for you then. Now your match will be coming up soon so stay in here until the intercom calls your name and then you can head on out this here hallway out these big doors to the stadium.”

“All right.”

“And don’t forget to pour your spirit energy into the object, it’s not as hard as you think it might be.”

“Well how do I do that?”

“Just visualize a fluid power flowing out of you, preferably your fist and just try to emit it out of your hand. Close your eyes if you need focus the first time, but after you do it once your body will adapt and get used to it, from then it’ll be easier to do.”

“Alright, I’ll try.” Sean closed his eyes and held his fist out with the glove as he held the glove arm with his other hand. He stood there steady and silent as Mr. Francis watched him, casually letting his smoke sizzle in the air without a word. Time stood still until a medium blue light encapsulated Sean’s hand around the glove and began to illuminate with bright color as he stood there in awe at the feat he just commenced.

“Wow, I really did it. So this is spirit’s energy?”

“That’s right, state of the art spirit energy.” Mr. Francis’ arms crossed as he watched Sean from their moderate distance from each other across the spacious bleak room, a huge smile masked over his face as he whispered to himself silent words just low enough for Sean not to make out clearly. “I knew it was him...”

Sean looked up quick at him. “Hmm, did you say something?”

“No, nothing, nothing at all. Alright boy I’m heading out now, I gave you all the things you need to know, now you’ll have to handle things from here on your own.”

“Roger,” Sean nodded looking back at him for a second. Sean continued gasping and smiling at the glowing energy in his hands and Mr. Francis smirked a little and then took one more whiff of his cigar and left the room. Sean stood there letting go of his hand and the energy depleted, as he stood there straight up looking around at the shelves.

“Well this is it, guess it’ll be my turn soon. I can’t wait! I wonder how big the stadium is?”

The crowd roared strong as the ongoing match continued, rows of people could be seen everywhere encasing every seat and stand high and low. A plethora of people stood up as some people sat, screaming at the top of their lungs cheers and cries as loud as they could make themselves. An announcer stood outside the ring, coaching the two fighter’s actions as they fought. A sturdy table stood strong at the side of the ring holding several men with paperwork and pencils in arm’s reach. They marked down notes and scribbles on the paper each time the fighter’s made an action, watching them close with every nuance in their movements. The fighters brawled on until a sudden clash struck hard on one of the opponents; he knelt down with vigorous breaths and began to attempt lifting himself back on his feet.

“The second contestant seems to be in a jam and is trying to recuperate himself from that last attack, but I’m afraid it’s too late because it’s about time to end this five-minute match. We will now consult the judges on who they think has won the match,” said Darion screeching as the announcer. Everyone’s attention shifted towards the judges as they continued scribbling down notes in feverous detail. The stadium stood silent as the judges waited and turned to each other back and forth, juggling their mouths in sharp, hazy whispers. They stood again silent and then one of the judges faced forward and took a white board while writing on it and stood it up high for the whole stadium to see. The white board had huge number one drawn on it in black marker and after a few seconds he placed his hand back down and crossed his legs inward waiting.

“Well it looks like the results are in, contestant one is the winner! Now we can move on to the final round of the evening! Please be patient until the next fighters are able to enter the ring.” Darion proceeded to guide the previous fighters out of the ring and lowered his mic as he chatted directions to them in his normal voice. The crowd lowered their tone and people began to sit down as the tranquil clear sky overcast the area with bright white light.

The two fighters treaded the light grass as they left the ring, the crowd abided by with immense patience anticipating the final fighters’ appearances at a moment’s notice. Darion adjusted his dark shades while then taking his microphone in close and smiled hard while facing toward the robust crowd.

“All right, ladies and gentlemen. Let me welcome in the final contestants for the Millennial Tournament preliminaries! Will the final contestants of the preliminary rounds please enter the ring?”

The wind blew strong through the air, as the arena grew silent with mild chatter among the colorful crowd. Time passed like a flowing river as the atmosphere grew fiercer anticipation for the upcoming fighters. Several minutes went on until a dark silhouette began to form on one side of the ring. A tough, dark guy came walking down the lane of the building and stepped on the sharp grass until reaching the main stadium arena. His atmosphere gave off a gloomy and dark demeanor coupled with a strong morbid hint to his personality and physique. The dark guy’s arms were crossed in together and he stood there in the middle of the ring with great confidence and fortitude. The seriousness in his face as he crossed his arms expressed intense intimidation to the crowd. Darion greeted him without fear and the dark person did not respond to him as he kept staring straight in the distance.”

“Our first contestant Vladimir has now entered the ring! Out of personal request we will refer to him as Vlad for short and now we will proceed to wait for our second contestant!” Another silhouette summoned at the opposing side of the stadium. A light skinned boy with a white t-shirt, jeans, and a red and white hat worn backwards walked gracefully along the grass and joined the two men in the stadium grounds. Sean looked over at Darion rubbing his head while smiling.

“Sorry, I’m late. I got distracted practicing controlling my spirit energy,” said Sean.

“No worries, what matters is you’re here now,” said Darion in his normal voice. “We will now be able to begin. This here is your opponent, Vladimir. Although he said he prefers being called Vlad for short,” said Darion.

“Ok,” Sean took a look at him and stuck out his hand, “how’s it going Vlad, my names Sean. Nice to meet you!”

The dark haired boy glared at with a grimacing look. He stared him down for a few seconds and then turned his eyes to side while closed. His arms stood crossed in as he stood there silent while Sean’s arm stood awkward like a stick extending out in the open. He took his hand

back and gave an awkward smile while rubbing his head. He didn't understand what he did wrong but he took it in and smiled back at him as they stood there for instruction.

"I am proud to announce to everyone the final contestants, Sean versus Vlad. Originally our contestant Vlad was opted to continue on with an automatic victory because of a lack of an equal amount of fighters for the preliminaries. But now with the sudden arrival of our lovely contestant Sean we can finally be under way!"

Sean smirked upon hearing Darion's praising words. Vlad's face stood stoic as he closed his eyes waiting with a patient demeanor around his body. The crowd sat anxious as the fighters stood in the ring as vigor emitted heavy from both sides. Darion backed up a few steps and gripped his microphone strong as he proceeded to speak.

"All right, now will both contestants please make some distance from each other so we may commence the match."

Both contestants turned their backs and walked several feet in the opposite direction. They both turned around and proceeded to stare off each other until Darion began to speak toward them and the crowd, shifting their focus on the following instruction.

"All right, without further ado, let's get this show on the road! The fighter's will have ten minutes to duke it out in the ring until the time limit. If either side says I give up during the match, then the opposing contestant will be the winner!"

The crowd stood stiff, Sean and Vlad stood silent facing each other, glaring with confidence.

"Ok, let the final preliminary match begin!"

Vlad placed his right hand on his neck and cracked it. "This shouldn't take too long," he said. He stared down Sean across the stadium with ferocity and jumped with a sudden leap as he blasted forward directly toward Sean.

Sean's face alerted at the sudden dash he took towards him. He shot himself into a defensive stance as Vlad appeared right in front of his view. Vlad thrust his fist forward, launching them back and forth in rapid fire as Sean struggled and shifted around them in dodging motions. The crowd began to roar with excitement as the atmosphere's mood shifted sharp as the two fighters kept throwing their punches.

Sean's face lit up with excitement as he continued dodging each rapid swing. "So, is it my turn yet?" said Sean laughing.

"Hold still..." said Vlad annoyed, launching punches faster hoping for one to connect.

"Alright, so it is my turn now..." Sean slowed down and grabbed one of Vlad's arms in a rapid motion. Vlad's face became flushed with shock as he struggled to rip his arm back in possession. Sean gripped his arm hard, clenched in his other fist and sprang a huge punching blow to his face, launching it as hard as he could. The crowd's expressions dropped and noise scattered across the stadium as Vlad pushed back recovering himself from the impact of the blunt shot to his right cheek.

"Whoa, well it looks like our second contestant Sean was able to land the first blow," Darion shouted, "even after all that brawling, Vlad's efforts weren't enough it seems to break through Sean's speed and defenses. Will Vlad be able to make a sudden comeback? Only time will tell, the match has just only begun. Now let's get back to it ladies and gentlemen."

Vlad stared Sean down with immense hostility. He turned his head to wipe his cheek and proceeded to look at the minor blood on the palm of his hand. He closed the grip of his hand tight and looked up back at Sean gripping his teeth angered and restless.

"You just got lucky," said Vlad irritated.

Sean's eyes closed as he laughed. "You shouldn't underestimate me, you know. I'm really strong. I've been fighting on the streets my whole life" Sean continued to laugh and chuckle at him, Vlad sucked in his teeth and stood there with his eyes as sharp as a bat's vision ready to rush down at Sean at any moment.

"We'll see who's strong after I'm through with you," said Vlad.

Vlad took a sharp step and rushed forward. Sean's face shifted expression as he huddled up his arms in a blocking motion as fast as he could. Vlad began rushing Sean with an onslaught of punches, bashing left and right against his stiff arms as they pushed through the stadium in mid combat. Vlad halted his flurry of punches and took his arms back and swung his left and right arms to deliver three aggressive hooks against Sean's defenses. Sean staggered on the impacts and Vlad took a sudden step back and reached toward the side of his hip area. He sprang his arm outward as fast a speeding whip and launched a cold hard wooden dagger right at Sean's face in a rapid motion.

Sean's face flew out and skidded on the pavement as his body slid across a few feet away upon the sudden impact. Vlad stood up as he watched Sean lay on the pavement of the stadium, a slight smirk riddled across his face as he stood there in silence.

The crowd stood firm after reacting to the sudden attack, they soon began making noise and cheers that exuberated the stadium grounds. Darion adjusted his shades as he looked over at Sean and then back at Vlad, he gritted his teeth and then held the microphone up to say, "Well, it looks like our contestant Vlad has made a comeback of his own. It looks like he had his own weapon his hiding away, waiting for the right moment to spring it out when he needed it most. Now let's see how both of the contestants fair at each other now that both weapons from each fighters have been revealed."

The crowd's noise leveled out in waves of volume, as time passed the air grew more silent. Sean began to lift his upper body and turned to pull his weight up to sit crossed legged. He took a deep breath while rubbing his cheek with only one eye open. He proceeded to look at Vlad as he stood there silent looking back with confidence basking all across his face.

"Wow, that one really caught me by surprise. It even stung a little, I'm surprised I didn't see that thing sooner at your belt," said Sean.

Vlad looked over at him and then immediately closed his eyes and turned his head with his arms crossed. He stood there in silence as he expressed his pompous attitude without hesitation.

Sean began to lift one leg up and place his hand on it as he pushed to stand firm in the middle of the exposing bright ring. He cracked his neck and started twirling his arm in a circle with the opposing arm on his shoulder. He ended off by placing his arms straight by his side as he glared down at Vlad.

"All right, time to get serious," said Sean with confidence, "let's go another round."

The two stared the ring with intensity and after a quick second both dashed forward at each other in an instant and clashed arms. They jabbed away at each other with instantaneous motions until after a long while they broke and stood a great distance across the ring as the crowd stood in their seats, feeling the immense pressure basking in the air all around them and over the bright skyline. The two stood there, as the stadium grew silent, the wind traveled through the air with harsh and sharp cuts slashing on their sensitive bruised skin, the two boys stood there tall gasping for breath as they situated themselves up to go another round. Vlad's face made shady expression, he stood straight up after immense panting and looked over at Sean with fearlessness straight in the eye.

“Enough, this has gone on long enough,” Vlad said wiping his bruised face, “I’ll admit I underestimated you. You much stronger than I thought you were, but it’s time I ended this match right now.”

Vlad stared him down strong as Sean recuperated himself some more and stood straight up to look at him back across the stadium. He began to lower his breathing cycles on moment at a time and then stood there and smiled at him looking back across the stage.

“Well, I’m glad you recognize how strong I am.” Sean’s breathing calmed and he took a deep breath and then exhaled. “But like I said, I’ve been fighting on the streets my whole life. You can’t beat me that easily.”

The crowd stood silent as the warriors stood centered in the opaque white arena. Sean’s smile stood firm, he cracked his knuckles in and looked over at Vlad across the ring with his daring grin.

“Both fighters only have about two minutes left of the match before we end it off and leave the results to the judges,” Darion reminded, “let’s see what our two fighters will do next after taking in the pressure of the time limit being almost up.”

The two fighters stood strong like opposing chess pieces across the ring, the crowd gasped and wheezed as the people in the stands stared down at them trying to anticipate their next move. The atmosphere was light and the wind blew lucid shrivels across the concrete, uplifting the tense air through the stadium as they continued staring each other down with sharp focus.

“All right, Vlad. Don’t you think its about time to end this,” Sean said

Vlad gave him no response. He looked at him with an intense stare and reached toward his dagger in a ready position.

“Now then let’s end this shall w—” Sean spoke as he went back into a fighting stance but a flash of speed shot through to him as Vlad disappeared in front of his very eyes. Sean thought to himself that he was quick and sensed a great presence behind him thrusting toward him at intense speeds. He clenched his teeth in and tried to react as fast as he could but before he knew it a massive thud clashed to his neck and his eyes turned pale white as his bare body staggered forward. Vlad just behind him had his dagger hovered above the back end of his neck and he waited there with immense patience until Sean’s body fell flat on the ground, existing lifeless as a rough dead body. Vlad stood up and gave a grunt to himself and placed his bruised dagger in the sheath. The crowd stood in their seats, gaping in awe at the scene that just happened before them, mild cheering and noise could be heard throughout the stadium and Darion soon came up to the two fighters, proceeding to check Sean’s pulse for any conscious signs.

“I can’t believe my eyes their folks. Even if I’m technically blind, my eyesight is still fairly sharp with these glasses on and even I couldn’t follow Vladimir’s intense speed in that sudden outburst of footwork he did. He moved in almost an instant, like some kind of ninja attacking his prey. It seems he really wasn’t playing around here folks, he was fighting to win,” Darion announced.

Vlad began shifting his wrists and started walking off the stage. His face was composed and while retaining his dark attitude throughout the entire aftermath. The crowd began settling their nerves and everybody started adjusting and making exotic motions as if it was over. Darion took a few steps away from Sean and looked over at the crowd.

“All right folks it looks that’s the end for this match, we only have about one minute left and it looks like the outcome of this match is decided. But let’s give a nice round of applause for our contestant Sean for putting up a good effort. He was a strong fighter and deserved his shot in

the ring, he really gave our contestant Vlad a run for his money. And we got witnessed a splendid final preliminary match, so let's give it up for Sean!" Darion yelled.

The audience gave a positive response and started clapping and cheering with ferocity and passion. Their noises roared throughout the far reaches of the stadium and expanded out towards the big city, loud and strong with exuberating sound waves expanding in all directions, the crowd stood strong as they continued clapping and applauding. Darion finally turned around and looked over at Sean's peaceful face on the white stadium grounds.

"Ok, can we get a stretcher, please. Our contestant seems to be fine when I checked him, he's simply passed out but he may need attention in case he has any more major injuries. So let's get him some medical attention," Darion said.

Darion started walking away toward the stadium exit and then as he kept treading along the stadium grounds in almost an instant, a swish of clouds began suddenly coming and partaking over the whole stadium. The crowd became riddled with confusion as the whole area became as dark as dusk so sudden. Everyone began shuffling around, talking, whispering, expressing themselves, gossip spread all throughout the stadium and Darion stood there at the foot at the stadium coaching them with his mic trying to ease the peace and gain back the crowd's charisma and patience.

"Now, now everyone quiet down. Please stay calm, we seem to be just having a sudden change in weather forecasting. Nothing to panic about, we will proceed out of the stadium in an orderly fashion just as planned before," Darion announced.

Just as Darion began to end his sentence, the dark clouds above began to part a tad and bright sunlight shone down toward Sean's body, like eloquent illumination from the sun. Sean's stood in the sunlight as he lay there peacefully like an angel. His eyes closed lying there passed out, the whole stadium was dark with the crowd, Darion, and Vlad even staring back at the boy's body as it stood so graceful in the limelight. Energy and small sparkles of light could be seen twinkling and glittering near his body, the illuminated light began shining stronger and stronger, focus on his body became real sharp until after a quick second and massive blast of light flashed down and shocked the whole stadium grounds.

The entire stadium of people jumped upon impact of the massive beam of life. The energy could be seen surging with intense force onto the boy's position, the light was opaque and shrouded out fair amounts of his body to the general public. People's screeches and cries flew and traveled throughout the stadium grounds and Darion shifted his hands in a defensive motion over his face as the energy blasted onto Sean's body with furious and intense rage. Vlad stood firm as the blast of energy kept surging on, his eyes open wide as the wind shifted along and blew onto his clothes with viciousness and intensity.

The stadium continued to roar with blasting energy waves and noises emanating everywhere. The blast of energy raged on, gushing downward into Sean's body like a harpoon. As time passed the grunting and screams of the people began to cease and they eventually shifted towards complete and utter silence as the energy waves began to subside. The crowd stared down at Sean's cold barren body housed in the middle of the ring. Darion face was flustered, he adjusted his glasses with his right hand and looked over at Sean's body as the white energy from sky began to subside.

"Well folks, I don't know what's going on but there seems to be something strange going on with Sean. A huge bright ray of light came out of nowhere blasting from the sky. I'm not too sure what's happening here as much as you are but let's wait a minute to see if Sean's still conscious and alive after that entire fiasco because we don't know why that ray of light appeared

in the first place. If we don't see any signs from him, we'll get a stretcher immediately to give him medical attention," Darion said.

Different reactions and chatter could be heard throughout the crowd. Each person had their own distraught emotions on what was going on and the loud babble and gossiping didn't cease or let up because of it. The light began to clear up more and as the crowd began to look over and try to process the scene aiming in their minds.

Sean's body lay flat their on the pavement on the stadium for a few moments and then in a sudden jolt began flashing colors of red, white, and blue. His body kept resonating the American style colors as his body started to rise up without his movement until his whole body was up in an upright position. His eye lids sat there closed as he rose up, arms spread out on each end with his legs a regular distance apart. The crowd began gasping and screeching throughout the scenario as they witnessed it before their very eyes.

The stadium grew silent again and the wind's noises grew silent in the stadium for a moment as well. The clouds began to part away as the sunlight came back into view of the massive stadium grounds and its bright, shining light cascaded all through the ring, uplifting the air more into a more positive and energetic mood. Sean's face and eyes were still closed and stoic, he stood there silent as the colors kept emanating through his body, red, blue, white, red, blue, white, red, blue, white. Over and over again the colors changed back and forth around his every muscle and body part. Vlad and Darion stood there as cautious as ever as they tried to assess the situation but came short on what to do next until the next major reaction came about for them both to see. The color swapping soon started to slow down and then eventually rested slow and steady on the blue color and sat there for a good time. The energy around him sat there with a calm blue tint and after several second with a sudden burst flashed red with fiery contempt and blared its wicked force across the stadium with heightened intensity. The shocking transition placed all people watching shocked, scared, and on guard faces as they emitted worried facial expression throughout the glaring show of red energy emitting from the fighter. The energy glared brighter and brighter, shocking the audience even more with the look on their faces. The energy began to dissipate and transitioned back into the soothing blue form, settling down the tone and mood of the arena. The boy stood there silent as the energy went away and disappeared, the audience looked down at the boy with perplexed faces and screeches, Vlad and Darion stood there silent as they continued staring over at Sean's peaceful and upright body.

Sean opened his eyes up slow and proceeded to crack his neck. He looked around at the crowd with an irritated facial express across his face.

"What fuck are all of you looking at?" Sean said irritated.

The crowd showed shocked facial expressions across the stadium. They stayed silent and focused on Sean's attention.

"Where the hell am I? Why the fuck does my body feel all sore like this? Shit, man I feel like my body got run over by a fucking truck or something." Sean looked around more and his face shot up with excitement after spotting an attractive woman in the audience. He walked over a bit and proceeded to speak to her. "Well, wherever the hell I am the chicks here seem to be fine as hell. Hey, why don't you and me ditch this joint and we can go catch a movie or something, I'm sure you're bored of whatever the hell this is." The girl expressed a shocked face and then switched to an angered one and blew him off with a sassy and annoyed facial expression of denial and turned her head to the side with her arms crossed. Sean's face grew angry as he looked back at her.

“Well, then fine then. Fuck you too bitch, you probably some bitchy ass chick anyway. Probably ain’t worth my time, I’ll find another bitch to fuck and pick up, nobody needs you,” Sean said pissed while walking away from her.

“Well, folks it looks like Sean’s back to consciousness but not without a sudden personality change to come along with it,” Darion said, “I don’t know what happened but it’s almost like he’s a completely different person than what he was initially when he started fighting the match. I don’t know what happened to him but let’s continue the match anyway to see if that sudden flash of light meant anything special or important to us. Is that ok for the judges,” Darion said looking over at them. The judges began conversing and then held up a sign saying ‘Ok, two more minutes.’ You heard it folks we’ll give the fighters two more minutes in the ring as a special occasion of this unique fight, the heavens themselves might be on Sean’s side as they may have given him a second chance to make a comeback after his powerful efforts in the first part of the fight. Now, let’s continue and let the battle begin!”

Sean looked over with wonder and excitement on his face at Darion. “A fight, yo that sounds dope, I didn’t know this was a fight, so who am I fighting?”

“You’re fighting that man over there, his name is Vladimir, Vlad for short he prefers.”

Sean looked over at Vlad signaling him to make cautious and irritable face aiming back at Sean. “I see, well hey over there. No hard feelings, but I’m going to beat your punk ass right now, ok. Don’t take it personal, I’m just gonna wing and fight you simply for the hell of it because why not. Got no clue why I’m here but who cares right, this should be fun anyways so I’m down.” Vlad’s face grew grimmer and angrier with veins blasted out of his head socket. They both went into battle positions and halted a bit before initiating any sudden moves. The crowd stood there staring with curiosity and wonder as they continued to make noise and uplifted the cheering mood once again. A boy tugged on his mother’s clothes to speak.

“Mom, why did that boy with the hat start saying bad words? Why’s he so different now?” The mother looked back at her child just as perplexed.

“I don’t know sweetie, his personality suddenly changed. When that blast hit him he went from such a nice looking, normal happy boy to some foul mouthed bad kid suddenly, I don’t understand what’s going on but honey please promise you never act like him. Promise me you’ll never speak such foul language like how he does ever,” said the mother.

“I promise,” said the child.

“Alright, so let’s get this show on the road!” Darion screamed.

The boys charged each other in a sudden burst and started brawling and swinging punches in rapid succession, trying to gain the lead on another but both seemed very evenly matched throughout the scrabble.

“What’s wrong I didn’t know you were this much of a bitch?” Sean said with an eager smile while dodging him.

Vlad’s face grew grimmer and angrier as he charged him harder with faster punches which came swinging in all directions toward Sean. Sean leapt up and around each punch and swung around spinning roundhouse kick right against Vlad’s face. Vlad flew off and skidded back several feet as he clenched his teeth holding his posture with an irritable facial expression. The crowd made noise in shock at the lethal looking blow.

“Wow folks, it looks like we got ourselves a new lead on our hands. Only moments ago we witnessed our two competitors just evenly matched until Vlad got a tad more serious and decided to try to end the match early. Now we’re seeing the tables turned with Sean gaining the lead after his new sudden transformation of personality and self as we all just witnessed

moments ago, we thought Sean was strong before but it seems Sean's even more riled up and he may have even more surprises on our hands if we continue watching this spectacular match," Darion said.

The crowd roared through the stadium with wild screams and screeches, cheering both fighters on and riling up the atmosphere of the stadium grounds.

"You see, they love me. My bad if it seemed like I stole the show and everything, but I guess I did just that. So I guess your punk ass is gonna have to just accept it, now won't you." Vlad's face grew with fiery rage and grim anger. "Oh, sorry man. Did I strike a chord? Maybe the more I piss you off, the more you'll stop being a pussy and come at me with all you got. Punk ass bitch, come the fuck on then if your serious about this shit! Come at me then, you punk bitch," Sean said getting in a ready position.

Vlad immediately dashed toward him delivering several fast paced successive punches toward him. Sean shifted back and forth and shaking off several blows that made contact. He continued blocking as the crowd stared down at them both with sharp, focus and intent.

"Now, that's more fucking like it. I knew you weren't just some punk ass bitch and shit, you looked like you had more balls than that. Now we can finally fucking fight seriously," Sean said.

"Shut the hell up!" Vlad yelled as he landed a good mean punch to Sean's face. Sean's head shot back a bit and then he stood a moment and then looked back and grinned at Vlad as he spat mild blood on the ground next to him.

"Wow, looks like we had another slight turn of events again folks. Vlad just landed a nice clean power punch right on Sean's face. But the strong young fighter doesn't seem to be backing down and rather seems to be more excited from the challenge Vlad is offering him. Let's give it up for both fighters and the excellent determination and efforts in the ring!" Darion and screamed as the crowd followed in cheer.

"Now, that's more like it. You can pack a punch after all. Well, no more playing around I think it's my turn to make a comeback and fuck you up some more before I finish here, afterwards I figure out what hell to do next since I don't have any shits of what's going on anyways," Sean said smiling at him while wiping the bruise on his face.

"Well, will the fighters go another round or will the judges end things off with a vote, since the fight is almost over with just under a minute's worth of time left. Let's see what the fighters do now."

Sean began adjusting his body around and doing mild stretches and strokes with his arms and legs across the arena. "Just getting ready for one second. I'll finish the job don't worry, you got a lucky punch in but you won't get a second chance, I'll make sure of that. I'll show you who's beast of combat in this ring in a moment." Sean finished up his mild stretching as Vlad stood there in a ready position tolerating his antics as he frowned at his harder with anger.

"Alright, now let's get going again." Sean leapt forward to charge Vlad with a massive hop and Vlad went right in position for attack from the street boy dashing straight toward him. As he pushed forward toward the opponent, the air flashed in a sudden shock and an old man appeared before him, emitting a sharp shockwave against Sean knocking down several feet away from him and Vlad's position.

The crowd looked over with surprised facial expressions, trying to discern the happenings of the sudden fast events that we're happening in the ring. The old man lowered his hand down slow as he stared down the boy while he rolled over on the concrete and began to get up in shock of the blast of energy he just endured.

“Dammit, what the hell was that?” Sean said lifting himself up and rubbing the back of his head back and forth. “I was about to finish this guy and now all of a sudden this old man wants to go to.”

“Well, this certainly is a massive turn of events. Suddenly a mysterious old man has entered the ring and interrupted Sean’s assault. This obviously violates tournament rules on never interrupting the fighter’s competition unless for good reason brought up with the committee. I suppose I will have to ask this strange person to leave the stadium immediately.” Darion walked up with caution to the old man, he adjusted his shades as he approached the man to gain a good look at him as he came closer. “Umm, excuse sir. You cannot just enter the ring suddenly like you did, I’m going to have to ask you to leave before I have to resort to calling the authorities.” The man stood silent there continue to stare at Sean without making eye contact toward Darion.

“Hey, man. You ought to listen to the guy. Before I have to rough you up myself too. That was obviously a cheap shot you got there with you sneaking up on me and shit like that, but I won’t let that shit happen again so you better be ready, old man. I don’t give a fuck if you’re the elderly or whatever, you fuck with me then I fuck with you, plain and simple.” Sean said clenching his fists and muscles in.

The old man stood staring silent as the people kept watching for patient for his next move.

“You bitch ass nigga. I’m about beat your punk ass old man; you better be ready! I’m the realest nigga you’ll ever meet.” Sean began to charge his opponent head on before the soft air flashed again as the old man’s persona vanished before him again. He halted with open eyes and stopped with his teeth grinned in with sharp rage, basked an irritable face as he looked around for his next appearance. “Come out, you coward!”

The air stood silent for a few moments and then flashed with a wave of energy as the old man appeared behind him out of eyesight and swatted a swift karate chop against the back of his neck causing Sean’s body to rivet in shock and fall over in an instant while passing out. The old man caught his body and lifted it up to carry over his shoulder as he took a small deep breath and let it out looking down at the stadium grounds. Darion gave the old man another good look in the eye and scanned his attire and his facial expression lit up with positivity, shock, and wonder as he began to recap the state of events to the crowd.

“Well folks, it looks like after more careful looking and consideration on my part we have ourselves the honor of having the great Master Shin before his visiting our beloved tournament grounds and joining us in the ring. I didn’t think we’d get the pleasure of meeting him like this face to face and deeply apologize for not recognizing him earlier folks

For those of you who don’t know Master Shin is the Spirit Master of the planet Other Earth we live on today. He is the planet’s protector and the planet’s strongest human being. He is a very special man and one can only wonder why we today would have the privilege of witnessing him leave his home to be with us today. He must have good reason since he felt he needed to interrupt our final preliminary round fight as such, let us wait to hear what the great master has to say to us all,” Darion said.

Master Shin looked over at announcer Darion and waved him at him toward himself in successive strokes. Darion reacted and walked over as fast as he could.

“Yes sir, did you need me?” Master Shin and Darion stood there and talked and whispered to each other, Darion’s face lit up several times in the minute he stood there to talk.

They ended their conversation and Darion smiled again and put his mic up to his mouth to speak the next word to the crowd.

“Alright, folks it looks like this round is over. Master Shin request we end this match in a draw due to special conditions and details that have been met and clarified with him and certain high ups. He wishes to allow both fighters to advance into the tournament, I ask the judges do you find this verdict acceptable from our great master. The judges turned their heads to each other whispering and took a look at Master Shin’s eyes as he took a nod back at them. They stood there silent for a bit and then shook their heads in acceptance. Darion took a nod back and proceeded to look back at the crowd.

“Well alright folks then that’s it both Sean and Vlad are the winners and we can now commence the Millennial Tournament preliminaries officially over! Thank you all for coming down for this spectacular event, you may exit the stadium at your own leisure at this time. Continue to be looking forward to more details on the tournament as the months and days to come from here on progress! Thank you and y’all have a great day and stay safe,” Darion said.

The crowd’s energy started to hover and die down as they chattered across the stands and began leaving out the exit ways of the stadium grounds. Vlad stood there crossing his arms as he closed his eyes and turned around to leave the grounds perplexed and annoyed but still struck with a moderate relieved expression on his face as he left the ring. Master Shin clenched in his fists and closed his eyes as he teleported away in a flash in a sudden moment as if he was never there. The stadium noises grew stable as Darion walked off lowering his mic while leaving the stadium the grounds.

Chapter 6

The grassland style area stood silent as the swift wind blew down the cold streaks of blue earth. A temple like home stood sturdy in a hushed and quiet woodland area. Master Shin flashed inside the house and found himself in small garden area. A plethora of trees just enough to fit inside were scattered about through the confined space. Different decorations and flowers were dispersed about through the garden and the air stood warm as Master Shin walked toward an underpass. He placed Sean's body over top a bedlike pedestal protruding out the ground. Sean laid there as peaceful as Master Shin looked over him with a stoic facial expression. He grabbed his shirt and pulled it over his body up to his head exposing his stomach into view. He shook his hands around and placed both hands on the boy's chest area and blue energy began resonating around his hands as he closed his eyes while placing his hands hard and firm on his chest. The energy resonated stronger while Sean's face clasped in and started sweating a storm as spasms of pain and rage blasted across his face throughout.

Sean began shifting his body back and forth while Master Shin held his ground and held him down as hard as he could. The blue energy kept traveling onto his body and the area beneath his hands lit up several times before he lifted it revealing a blue pentagram symbol flashing back and forth across his chest. Sean kept shifting his body back and forth in vigorous motions, he clasped his chest in as he took in deep breaths and then opened his eyes in a sudden moment looking at Master Shin while barely keeping hold of one eye open.

"You, damn old man," Sean said wheezing with rage while clasping his chest. "What the hell did you do to me? This shit hurts like hell!"

"I'm sealing you up, at least not permanently anyway. Your bad form needs to be put under control in order for the trial to commence, so that's what I'm doing," Master Shin said.

"What the hell does that even mean? God dammit old man if you fuck with me anymore like this I swear I'll fuck you u—" Sean said, as his body grew weak and his eyesight grew dimmer until he lost vision and passed back out.

"Alright now, It'll be another minute or so before you revert back," Master Shin said while lifting up his arms. He took a minor step back and looked over at a nearby clock and waited awhile until about a minute's worth of time passed over. Sean's body shifted around a few times as he began to open his eyes slow and lift his body upward while scratching head. He looked around a few times and then looked over at Master Shin with a perplexed look on his face. "Man... where am I exactly? Who... are... you? I thought I was fighting in the tournament last time I checked..." Sean said confused.

“You’re in my safe haven. My own home, my quarters. I brought you here because I had too. I couldn’t let you participate any longer before it was too late or something bad happened,” Master Shin said.

Sean scratched the back of his head in. “What do you mean?”

“I mean if I hadn’t done anything your bad side might of took over. Anything could have happened if I didn’t intervene.”

“Well now you lost me, argh...” Sean brought his hands to his chest area. “What is this? Why do I feel pain on my chest?”

“That’s was my doing. I had to seal your bad form up like I mentioned before, but it seems like you didn’t hear me then. Looks like you can’t always retain memories when you’re in one form, that’s interesting to know.”

“I see...well what happens now?” Sean said adjusting his neck sitting upright.

Well first off you can get up, follow me let’s talk in an open space in the garden,” Master Shin said.

“Alright”

Sean hopped off the pedestal bed and followed him several feet until they entered into a wide open space with vivid green grass. Master Shin turned around toward Sean with his arms behind his back and looked at him with a stern face.

“Alright so let’s begin,” Master shin said. “I am the Spirit Master named Master Shin. Spirit Master is a title I obtained long ago on this planet by many reasons in the past. The title means that I am the master of all spirit energy and strongest man on Other Earth. I am also the planet’s protector more or less, I’m the main planet’s protector from an extraterrestrial level. I protect and do things that are out of the power of the people. Therefore, it is a pleasure to meet you, I take it your name goes by Sean,” Master Shin.

“Uhh...yeah it is. Thanks, for having me here I guess. I still don’t know know why you brought me here.”

“Yes I was getting to that part. I would like to also mention that I am the master of all spirit energy. More or less I have complete control over it without needing a weapon. I will go more in depth with this later, but you see spirit energy is a mysterious resource and energy that is only found in this world and universe and humans here can use it to fight in combat and as a sort of renewable energy resource to fuel as technology and infrastructure for electricity and everything else of the sort. There are different types of spirit energy in this world but the main usage that you can me use is the form of spirit energy in its most basic form, so I will explain to you what that means in terms of why you’re here on this planet and why I brought you here to home.”

“Ok that sounds cool.”

“Now basically, your predestined to do certain tasks on this planet. I noticed this back at the tournament area. I guess a stereotype in fiction generally is that you’re a sort of chosen one of sorts”

“Chosen one, what is this some kind fantasy novel. What would someone like me who’s just some kid who grew up on the streets be chosen to do?”

“Well we don’t have to call you that and use that generic term if you don’t want too. But basically you are predestined to be my disciple. I have to train you in order for to be ready for a trial and the tournament events.”

“Ok? What exactly are you training me for then?”

“Well this goes into a lot of complicated system of events and history of this land but I’ll make this make it much shorter and simpler to you to process and understand easier.”

“Alright.”

“So, basically again I am called the Spirit Master and what your new title you will be called is going to be referred by as is Spirit Disciple. You will be my pupil in training from here on to train and develop for something called the Trial of Virtue. You see, along me as Spirit Master there are two others that have the same or debatably higher positions of power like me and these people are named the Sacred Guardians. The Sacred Guardians are the three entities the rule over special realms called the Sacred Realms and all of the universe in general in terms of this universe and the universe you came from.

My name is Master Shin and I rule over Other Earth and that’s it more or less of this realm, you can call this universe and realm we live in currently simply the Spirit World. That’s a decent name for things in general to better keep tabs on what you should refer to the universe like plane we reside in right now.

Now there are two other sort of dimensions here in this universe we’re in. They have very religious style names with the first one being referred to as the Promised Land and the second being named the Underworld. These lands are being ruled over currently by two men with very religious names named after two very religious figures in religious history. The ruler of the Promised Land has the religious name of Abraham or Abram for short and the ruler of the Underworld has the religious name that goes by Lucifer. These two rulers govern over the separate two Sacred Realms that are not a part of this dimension and they have utter and complete control over those lands entirely.”

“I see, that’s pretty cool. They sound like they’re really important people”

“Indeed they are. They rule over the universe simultaneously more or less, Abram rules over most of the universe since he represent the goodness of all the universe and good always suppresses evil as everybody knows.”

“Yeah that’s right.”

“Although even though this is seen as a sort of golden rule, this concept is in turn not very fair at least from the standpoint of the the king of the Underworld. I forgot to mention their titles for each position are named Guardian of the Promised Land and Demon King of the Underworld. So as I was saying the Demon King Lucifer loses out on his chance to rule majority of the universe and is stuck being confined to ruling only his territory the Underworld if things stayed this way. Therefore, a system of competition based on prophecy was created that centers around the tournament as well for training exists to make things more fair in terms allowing the Demon King to have a chance to rule the universe for some time.” Sean nodded his head as he continued listening to his next word.

“With that all being said, this prophecy is named The Legend of Good and Evil. This legend is a prophecy of two heirs coming to Other Earth every several one thousand years when they die relatively the same time and this special time is named a Special Year that occurs every Millennial Tournament time period. The Millennial Tournament happens every one thousand years but only certain millenniums are a Special Year. When a Special Year comes around two heirs come to Other Earth to succeed the Guardian of the Promised Land and the Demon King of the Underworld and they do this by coming here to train and hone their skills before the heirs finally come together to challenge each other to a sacred and legendary fight in which the winner of this fight is decreed the ruler of the universe.”

“Ok, I see... I think I know where this is going, it sounds very interesting definitely.”

“The legendary battle that both of these heirs commence in is called the Battle of Destiny and the names both of these heirs are referred to as are the Spirit Disciple and the Demon Heir, with the Spirit Disciple being you like I mentioned.”

“Ok cool but wait you lost me a little bit somewhere. Where did the Spirit Disciple part come from, this Promised Land place sounds like some kind of heaven like area so I don’t get where the name came from there exactly? The Demon Heir title makes sense and fits perfectly more,” Sean asked.

“I’m glad you asked that question, I was about to explain in detail. Basically the position for these titles are very important but believe it or not they’re also optional as well.”

“Optional? Wait so your saying I don’t even need to become this Guardian thing if I don’t want?”

“That’s right. It would be recommended and advised for you too but you don’t actually have to accept the offer and become Guardian if you do not wish too.”

“Then what the heck is even the point of telling me all this?” Sean replied confused.

“Well I was getting to that. So if you choose or the other heir chose to resign from the Legend of Good and Evil prophecy and chose to not partake in the legendary battle for good and evil. Then what would happen the angel or demon with the highest qualifications and power in either realm would be chosen to take the place of the position until the next Special Year, it is not advised to do things this way since a summoned heir would be much more qualified for these positions rather than a regular angel or demon. By that also is a detail I left out, angels and demons all live in the Promised Land or Underworld, anyone that lives on this planet is seen as Earthlings still.”

“Oh yeah what’s up with that how come a lot of people come here rather than straight to those places.”

“More or less it’s a space issue and the flaw of the balance of goodness and sin and badness in most of the human soul of every human being on the planet Earth. Because so many humans make mistakes and do wrongdoing and have a fair amount of evil in their hearts along with good, they usually go to Other Earth instead of straight to the other realms because they are seen as flawed humans still and cannot not enter into those realms yet at the moment, only maximized humans who were very good or very evil based on their time on Earth go straight toward the other realms upon their deaths immediately. Although space is also major a detail as well since only so many of a population can exist in those other realms. I’ll get more on that later but there are multiple ways you can get to the Promised Land or Underworld even if you didn’t make it to them right after your death occurred.”

“Ok I see.”

“So like I said I’ll explain more on that later but back on to the subject beforehand. You can choose to resign or not from taking the sacred positions even if its recommended you take it but for my position as Spirit Master the Spirit Disciple is mandated to succeed after me and take my place when I pass. And yes I did mention that you can pass away again in this universe.”

“Really, how does that work.”

“There’s a lot to go into but more or less every human being in the Spirit World is basically immortal, all human beings except some that have special exceptions for why they have to die. Only special conditions can cause death for regular immortal people like extreme and severe damage to the body and immense pain. Our bodies are much more durable in this world compared to the regular human beings back in the Real World. And with the Sacred Guardians we are all destined to die at a certain point, it’s just the way it is when accepting the position.”

“What! Really? That sounds awful? Why would anyone want to take them then if they knew they were gonna die?”

“Well simply because of the honor of doing it or the power that comes with the trade, anyone would do anything for that amount of control over such sacred amounts of land and space. Therefore, having qualities like that make this very appealing for most angels, demons, and people regardless even if it means sacrificing your life.”

“So wait I have no choice but to succeed you and I also can’t back out of it and will have to die anyway against my will. That really sucks man, I was getting really excited too after hearing all of this, now I’m having second thoughts and not so sure how excited I am...”

“Well there is a way for the Spirit Disciple destined to be Spirit Master to opt out as well once he already becomes the next master.”

“Really, how is that?”

“Once you become Spirit Master, your next task will be training to master spirit energy at your own pace. On your journey to fulfilling that you will have a chance to resign being Spirit Master once the next Spirit Disciple rolls around and at that point you would have to train him yourself. But after you’ve trained him thoroughly for their following succession of your position you could relinquish ownership of your title of Spirit Master and disown the ability of the usage of the Spirit Shot technique.”

“Ok, that sounds reassuring...but wait...what’s this Spirit Shot technique you’re talking about.”

“It’s what differentiates you from other people. You see you’re not like other people, the reason you have to be Spirit Master is because this world needs to have a Spirit Master to protect the Earth at all times. And because the position is only temporary since I keep stay the same master after the next Special Year then that means I have to pass the next role for the title on to a new student. And in this case that new student and pupil is you.

Now like how I mentioned earlier I said I was going to go more in depth with spirit energy at a another time but basically there a several different types of spirit that exists in this world and you can use the various types to fight with different attributes and abilities toward them depending on what it is. You generally are only born here with one attribute and that’s if you’re a spirit user, as in if you are able to use and control spirit energy in your body.”

“Ok,” Sean said as he kept listening on.

“Now in this world regular people can’t use spirit energy. And for the ones that do have the ability to do so can’t use them unless they are equipped with something called a spirit weapon. Spirit Weapons can’t be used unless the user has somewhat decent control over spirit energy in his body, after the user gets that down they can channel their energy through a weapon of choice that fits them. Afterwards they can use the weapon freely and summon the weapon at will to use to fight in combat.”

“Wow, that sounds amazing! I wanna get one now, do you have any?”

“Yes I can give you them now actually.” Master Shin held out his hand and a pair of gloves materialized fast in front of his hands. “These are called Spirit Gloves, you can use them to fight and emit spirit energy better through your hands to attack.” He handed them over to Sean and Sean’s face lit up with excitement and joy like no other.

“Man, this is so cool my very own spirit weapon!” Sean took the gloves and glared at them with a big open smile. “Because I couldn’t keep the preliminary rounds ones right? I don’t seem to have them with me anymore.”

“Yes, I took them off of you when we were in the ring and handed them to your announcer friend.”

“Oh, and what happened with the tournament then? Did I win? I almost forgot to ask about that! Did I lose?”

It ended with a draw, I requested it from the announcer boy. He was a nice young lad, I explained to him what was going on and he understood just fine. Don’t worry, you both won the fight. That’s the way I wanted it to end.”

“Ok, that’s a relief..” Sean said releasing a calm breath in relief. “Thank goodness, because as soon as I heard about the tournament I was anxious to keep going for sure, I mean it sounds so much fun to participate in this, y’know?”

“Anyways, as I was saying,” Master Shin grunted.

“Oh, my mistake. Alright, you can continue, sorry.”

“I was explaining all that first leading up to the technique. So basically you need those gloves in order to fight. You need them in order to use your spirit energy.”

“Yeah, like you said before,” Sean said.

“Now, you look like a fist fighter so these should work perfectly for you as well,” Master Shin said.

“Yeah, these should work just perfectly!”

“Now, onto the technique. You need to learn an attack and technique named the Spirit Shot from me that you and solely you can use once learned. This technique distinguishes you from other fighters and people on this planet and it distinguishes you as the Spirit Disciple coming up to be Spirit Master.”

“Alright, that sounds cool. What else about it is so special though?” Sean asked.

“I’m getting to that...so basically this technique is a move only a person of pure spirit energy can use, and can only use and fully innovate and change and manifest into other techniques. You remember how I said there’s multiple different types of spirit energy?”

“Yeah.”

“The case with most people is most human beings can have varied forms of spirit energy of different elements out there in general if we talk about the basics. Things like fire energy or water energy are some of the types that exist out there that multiple people could end up using and fitting for their personal energy type. But with the Spirit Disciple, he is the only one that is able to use pure spirit energy, which is the universal form of all spirit energy everywhere. Pure spirit energy is great because it almost has no weaknesses and is very universal overall and can have an edge over any energy type out there and resistance to many too.”

“Wow, that sounds awesome, tell me more.”

“Like I said the Spirit Disciple can only use pure spirit energy. The only other person that can use pure spirit energy is yours truly being the previous or current Spirit Master themselves. We are the only ones that can use basic pure spirit energy on the planet.”

“Wow, that’s really cool. I feel like super unique and everything now. That’s pretty awesome.”

“Yes, it is very cool I would say. Now onto the technique again. The Spirit Shot is a technique that only the Spirit Disciple and Spirit Master can use and master. And it is required for every Spirit Disciple to learn and develop skills to use this technique under the teachings and supervision of the Spirit Master currently at the time themselves. It’s simply an attack that you must know to carry onto this path.

“Ok, I see...I think I’m getting this a bit more now...It’s starting to make a bit more sense to me.”

“This technique is very powerful if used correctly and with accurate precision. It is very hard to learn and is not an easy task to overcome in say overnight. It could take several months to learn this technique in terms of the training regimen.”

“Wow, geez. Several months...that’s a lot of time. But it still sounds interesting regardless to me.”

“Yes so I’d advise you not to take this lightly when hearing it, it’s very serious business when learning this technique. If you don’t pay attention and focus yourself, you could find yourself being very hurt and injured upon trying to learn it for yourself.”

“Ok, got it. I’ll be careful then.”

“Now I have to mention this again. Your ability for regular and pure spirit energy usage is unique, It’s one of a kind like mine. And the Spirit Disciple is summoned here only several few thousand years along with the Demon Heir. With this ritual being set in stone for how often the heirs are brought to this planet for the legendary battle and you the Spirit Disciple being the only one being able to use pure spirit energy, this highlights the importance on why you can’t opt out of the Spirit Master role. This planet must always have a Spirit Master in place at all times and because I’m not immortal in this position unless I resign, which I am not because it is my personal choice not to do so, you have to succeed my simply for those reasons of scarcity for users of pure spirit energy and the planet’s constant need for a protector.

“Well, wait what about that Guardian guy? Isn’t he the ruler of the universe? Why can’t he simply protect and everything himself?”

“The reasoning for that is complicated but in simple terms I was assigned this role because the planet Other Earth needed its people to be able to protect their own planet on their own and anything out of the hands of the normal citizens and residents of Neo-Pangea would be put in my hands ideally. I would assume a task an Earthling could fix on his own shouldn’t be tampered with by the Guardian of the Promised Land, in which I am as well considered an Earthling being the strongest one here currently. Therefore, that is my best answer to give you about that subject.”

“I see, that makes sense. People need to handle their own problems that is in their own power. That sounds legit to me.”

“So yes its not a simple as you would make it out to be like that but that is indeed a generalized simplistic answer that I could give. Anyways you must follow me under my teaching no matter what, I am sorry if you do not wish to do so but that’s the way it is under these strict conditions.”

“No, it’s perfectly cool. I’m all on board for doing this. I just wanted to know the details is all, I’m fine with becoming the Spirit Master,” Sean said.

“Are you fine with succeeding the Guardian as well,” Master Shin asked.

“Yeah, sure at least I think so...maybe. You mentioned it’s optional right? What periods of time can I opt and cancel out?”

“Well, you get three chances. You can opt out when you enter in right now, you can before the legendary fight and right after the fight depending and based on the outcome of the battle.”

“Now, I see. So I got multiple tries then throughout the tournament.”

“More or less, yes. Yes, you do. You can opt out and completely quit the trial at any of those points I mentioned but not during the actual tournament, that’s when you cannot do it.”

“So, um tell me more about these trials then because I don’t think you went into them too deeply enough or at all I think?”

“Yes, yes. I almost forgot. Now if you haven’t guessed your opponent you had before. He should have given off an eerie air to him while you’re fighting, did you notice it?”

“Yeah, he was a spooky dude. Very moody, and not very happy person in the least.”

“Yes, very true. I brought him up because if you hadn’t guessed he’s your rival in all this, he’s the Demon Heir we talked about before.”

“For real? That’s pretty crazy but understandable too nonetheless.”

“Yes, he’s your rival in training and during the tournament. The Demon Heir destined to fight the Spirit Disciple over the title of ruler of the universe and then decide whether good of evil wins overall in the end.”

“Yes, I understand now. He’s the one I’m supposed to fight and challenge in that legendary fight or whatever.”

“Indeed, now back on subject. I mentioned you undertaking trials earlier, did I not?”

“You did.”

“Now what I meant by that was. There are two trials, that each of you have to take in terms of you each taking only one. These trials are named the Trial of Virtue and the Trial of Vice.”

“Ok, cool stuff.”

“You have to undergo the Trial of Virtue obviously if it wasn’t that obvious already. And in terms that Vladimir fellow he has to take the Trial of Vice naturally. You represent the side of good and he represents the side of evil. You two are like two opposite ends of a spectrum ready to collide over to see who’s better than the other one.”

“I see, so we represent like polar opposites of each other. That’s pretty cool.” Sean said laughing.

“Yes, indeed. Now in terms of what these trials mean and what has to be carried out. When I captured you and took you off to my home where we are now, I laid you down and applied what is called a Blue Star Seal onto your chest. It has a pentagram like shape and symbol to it and its color is obviously blue like mentioned in the title. This seal was meant to seal away your demon form. I don’t know if you retain any memories about that and that which had happened at the tournament grounds, you weren’t yourself at the time so I’m not sure if you remember yourself clearly,” Master Shin said.

“Umm...” Sean clasped his head in with his eyes closed for a moment. “I’m not to sure I do, I think I just remember this huge ray of light coming down from the sky hitting me and feeling a massive shock hitting me from it until I passed out and woke up here,” Sean said.

“Yes, I was sure you wouldn’t really remember. That ray of light was spell titled Judgment. It was sent from the heavens by the Guardian of the Promised Land to test and initiate your body to activate the trial for you. I think he realized early on the Spirit Disciple was coming and discovered it was you during the tournament grounds. I was advised to watch the tournament to be on the lookout for the technique’s usage to discover which person you were so I could bring you back here like this.”

“Ok, I see... so it all was planned then.”

“More or less, it was rather just lucky timing and careful guessing and predictions of events all organized into one. But the point is that I found you just fine and managed to bring you here to seal your soul and other form before he completely took over you.”

“Why, what’s up with all that. What is this other form anyway that you’re talking about?”

“The other form is a demon form that was activated by Judgment in order for you to overcome and become a full-fledged angel at the end of the trial. If you do not wish to use the term demon colloquially like that then you can simply say bad form as a euphemism instead.”

“Yeah, that’s fine, saying demon all the time would be a pain to say over and over. So what’s up again? Is it like some kind of second personality?”

“You are really the light hearted, air headed type aren’t you. I just said there’s a demon inside you and your acting like nothing’s happened and everything’s just fine.”

Sean laughed. “Well, I’m not the worrisome type really. I’m sure it’s no big deal in the end.”

“It is very much important. You should take it very seriously. If you do not, you will not get the opportunity to become an angel and partake in the legendary battle.”

“Ok, ok. I got it, you can continue.”

“Alright, then,” Master Shin sighed. “Basically, you have an alter ego inside you right now. Judgment took all the evil in your heart and tested you and brought it out into a more or less physical form. You passed in terms of how the spell works for you. It brought out your evil which seemed to be very little to say the least and maximized into a wholesome personality. The technique works a bit differently when used on regular people that aren’t the Spirit Disciple.”

“Ok cool.”

“This personality is what we’ll now call your bad form. We can refer to him as bad Sean to make it easier on ourselves. Now bad Sean is evil and completely bad to the bone and core right now. He’s mean, offensive, and curses a lot and uses plenty of foul language to get his point across in his speaking and dialect.”

“I see,” Sean said smirking.

“Now this bad form of yours is a test more or less. You have to live your life with that alter ego of yours in your daily life and basically overcome him and make him become more good overtime.”

“Ok,”

“You don’t have to think about it too much to accomplish this. Just be yourself and try your best to stay out more often than he does. You’ll switch personalities randomly throughout your journey through the tournament. So let people know about this while your partaking in it.”

“Alright.”

“I’m serious because your other form is the complete opposite of you. I’m sure you curse because you’re an up and coming teenager going into adulthood, but your other form is going to use much more foul language than you.”

“Yeah, ok. And yeah I do curse quite a bit actually but not in a mean way or anything, I’m a pretty friendly guy overall,” Sean said smiling.

“Yes, indeed you are. But people won’t always think so when your other form pops out. He will probably curse many times, insult people consistently, and always be sexist and misogynistic towards women. He’ll be the archetypical bad boy side of you. Especially with the women thing, excuse my language but your bad form will probably refer to most women as a bitch a lot and maybe as hoes a few times as well.”

“Man, you sure know a lot about this. How do you know all of this is going to happen?” Sean asked.

“Because I was told this information by the Guardian. He told me the following Spirit Disciples after me would go through this and become evil and bad during their journeys through the trial. And you’re the first one to take this trial out of anyone out there.”

“Really? Wow, that’s interesting. So, I’m like the first of my kind then? Nice!”

“Don’t get to excited, this means the pressure is on even more for you to get serious and really learn your stuff to get ready for all this. Are you ready to meet the challenge?”

“Yes, sir. I am.”

“Ok then. Well like I said when you do overcome your bad side, if you do. You will become an angel and gain more strength and get much stronger in order to further fight your rival Vladimir.”

“Alright, cool.”

“So do you accept your chance to go for the title of Spirit Master and Guardian of the Promised Land. The Guardian position is optional again because it’s a role that doesn’t need the heirs to govern and simply because something I didn’t before but a long time ago when constructing these positions, the Guardian and the Demon King we’re chosen but the Spirit Master’s position was still limited to the planet. So this system of doing things allows for the Spirit Master to become the ruler of the universe too and become Guardian. And because both Spirit Master and Guardian represents goodness and morality over the evil Demon King position, it only goes naturally and hand and hand for them both to match up and be able to be govern by the same person if accepted by the Spirit Disciple. So I ask once again, do you wish to continue on and carry out your journey to possibly be Guardian of the Promised Land?”

“Yes, I do. Or at least I think so. Rather to be honest I just think this is all interesting, I don’t know if I’m actually going to become it or not assuming I win and all that. I just want to have fun. I don’t mind becoming Spirit Master and all that. So sure I do accept but I don’t know if I’ll actually become Guardian or not. I just want to participate and have fun like I just said, that’s all,” Sean said.

“Alright, thank you. You are officially a participant of the Trial of Virtue. May you be blessed with much luck and good fortune on your journey through overcoming your inner evil in your heart. And much luck on defending the title of good and defeating your rival in combat Vladimir as he journeys with you on your way into facing in combat in the end,” Master Shin said.

“Wait, journey with me? What do you mean?”

“Oh, I much apologize for that. I did not mention that it is required of you to have your rival in combat Vladimir on your team on your journey through the trials and the tournament. The trials rules require you both to partake on your training together on the same team while participating in the tournament. If I did not mention it before, Vladimir’s job for the Trial of Vice is to retain his evil and remain as bad as possible during his path in the tournament and trial. He is meant to preserve his immortality while you are just the opposite.”

“Oh, so he’s like supposed to stay evil?”

“Exactly and in order to test this properly and effectively and as an act of precaution its been set up for you both to engage with each other on the same team while trying to maintain and manage the polar opposites and balance of good and evil. He will feel the strain of trying to retain his evil being exposed to mostly very good and moral individuals that make up your team and you will be exposed to his influence, your own alter ego influence, and the influence of the world consumed by corruption and greed in order to over your personal tribulations and retain your goodness through the trial. You definitely have the much more cumbersome workload unfortunately; I apologize for that.”

“No, that’s fine. It all sounds very fun anyway. I’m looking forward to it.”

“It is true. You are a very light hearted individual then. It will be interesting training you and getting to know you better through our journey together.”

“Yeah, I’m looking forward to it too, like I said it should be fun. So, yeah that’s cool and all I fully understand what’s up now with the tournament and trials and everything and I’m fully onboard. But what happens now? What am I going to do first, learn your little technique thing?”

“You will in due time but I must make preparations first since my notification for your arrival was fairly late. I will prepare your training regimen soon but I’ll need several days to do so. In the meantime, you can do whatever you wish in the meantime.”

“Alright, cool. So what do you recommend I do first?”

“I would think maybe you could partake in a challenge first off.”

“A challenge? What’s that?” Sean asked.

“A challenge as in the Dojo Challenges that the tournament offers a sort of appendage to in the tournament to make it more interesting and easier to handle and partake in. They are implemented to provide more opportunities for the teams to win more or less and boost their chances to arrive in the Promised Land and still obtain a wish should they possibly lose during the regular tournament battle,” Master Shin said.

“Ok so what kind or type of opportunities do you mean; how do these challenges work?” Sean asked.

“Well what I mean by that is, so basically there about five challenges in this tournament and each of these five challenges has a unique area or zone in which you travel to and partake in them in. Once you go to these areas and meet the locals and communicate with them they will usually show you around and will typically show you where the dojo to partake in the challenge is and they might even possibly give you advice to take it easier and have an even better chance at succeeding in it.

Each dojo and challenge is run and governed one of a group of five people called a World Master or the World Masters. These World Masters are the ones in charge of each dojo and each area and zone that comprises our country and continent, Moder and Neo-Pangaea more or less. We have an entire system actually on who runs what part and what land as a whole but I won’t get into that information right now, for now that’s all you need to know is that World Masters exist and they govern the zones and the dojos in their respective areas,” Master Shin said.

“Ok, so then what else is there?” Sean asked.

“I was getting to that if you just let me finish...” Master Shin exerting a deep breath of air. “Ok so, where was I? Oh, so like I was saying... The World Masters are the rulers of their respective zones and territories and they also run the dojos they are in charge of and meant to govern. They each have different styles of challenges and ways about going about their way of testing you and their new challengers at hand.

It’s all up to them and their challenge style of choice must be approved by the Committee so that we make sure nothing too dangerous or life threatening is being executed here. Even though I say that really with a big stretch because each challenger and team that partakes in this tournament agrees and it is their choice to risk their life again even though they are here in the afterlife of dying twice while partaking in the tournament and it is not in any way the staff, Masters, or the Committee’s responsibility if teams die again through any events or outcomes pertaining to the tournament unless it had something to do with the staff members mentioned before or some extreme extraordinary case for the causes of death that were out of tournament rules and boundaries.

In any of those cases we will take full responsibility and possibly call the tournament off but in most cases the responsibility is all on you and your choosing to risk your life again to partake in this tournament. Like I mentioned before if I have and if I haven't said this clearly then I apologize but this tournament is not mandatory for you, your rival, or anyone else this is just a means of you make it easier to train yourself for training to be Spirit Master and your optional choice of partaking in the Trial of Virtue to possibly become Guardian as well. But again you don't have to do any of this in terms of the tournament I can train you on your quest as Spirit Disciple either way. But back on subject to before we say we approve and judge the dojo challenge style for safety purposes but the risk of you and your team mates dying in the tournament is still very high.

Each challenge has a different difficulty level depending on the dojo, the Master, and the area or element involved in the dojo. Usually the Dojo Master likes to incorporate their element or area geography into the challenge at hand to make things more interesting and unique from the rest of the challenges. But in the end it all depends, so again we do check for safety precautions but that doesn't mean they won't be hard or even life threatening to any team challengers out there. All fighters and teams must be prepared for that, with that being the whole point to the tournament in the first place, are you ok with that?"

"Yeah, sure. Yes, I am, I can handle anything, I'm plenty strong and I always like a good challenge."

"Great then you'll fit in perfectly. Well I'd say that's generally about it, the reason I mentioned the information about the challenge earlier is because the Mountain Master in the Mountain Zone is allowing early team members to participate in his challenge early based on his approval. He's basically letting some teams get an early start based on his opinions of them and their performance during the preliminaries. I already entered you into a team that I felt you would fit into perfectly after I told your announcer guy, he's partially in charge with the team members placements and where everyone goes based on their performance in the preliminaries. Like I mentioned before you and that Vlad character that faced off are automatically team members by law but your other two team mates I had the power to place you there and of course that Vlad character will follow suit automatically also, so your officially apart of their team now," Master Shin said.

"Alright cool, so then where are they then. Can I meet them now? And like what are their names and all that?" Sean asked.

"Right, so then your team members' names are Noah and Adam. They very nice and friendly young fellows and they both happened to be brothers as well," Master Shin said.

"Oh, wow that's pretty cool. Two brothers for teammates and I also happened to notice their religious names as well," Sean said.

"Yes, they were named after very important religious figures of Abrahamic religions, they have a sister named Eve as well who is also a good young gal. But anyways those are your teammates nonetheless," Master Shin said.

"I see, so that's great then. I can't wait to meet them, I guess I'll go meet them now, where are they?"

"Wait one moment, I think you should get a few days of rest first. You are open to stay here a few days and rest your body before you go out adventuring again. Your body from the preliminary round and after getting struck by the Judgment spell and having your evil demon form getting sealed up to a two personality level by my Blue Star Seal should have already put a dramatic toll on your body already."

“Well now that you mention it... I am feeling moderately drowsy physically, I guess I could use a few days of rest then.”

“Yes, going straight to meet your teammates now and partaking straight in the challenge already would not be very wise. Let me put you and your body under a sort of hibernation so your body can reach a homeostasis and well balanced and healthy stage after getting say three to five days of rest. Don't worry the spell places your hunger and bladder levels at pause so you won't have to eat or excrete waste for hibernation process while sleeping. But probably when you awaken you'll have to instantly use the restroom and be starved of famine and will have the urge to eat a meal immediately. Is that fine with you?” Master Shin asked.

“Uh, yeah sure. Whatever helps me get better. I like sleeping, and it'll be probably breeze by in no time at all. So sure, I'm ready when you are.”

“Alright then, so then let's go back to the area I had kept you at again I will put you under hibernation over there and you'll wake up in a matter of three to five days whenever your body is ready. After which I will notify you where your team mates are and you can partake in the Mountain Dojo Challenge is you wish and your team mates comply.”

“Ok cool, let's go.”

They walked back over toward the shrine looking area with the stone like bed. Sean walked over and laid down on the stone bed as Master Shin held out his hand toward his forehead and proceeded to speak out to him.

“Alright, so close your eyes. You will be put into a deep sleep shortly.”

Sean closed his eyes as Master Shin placed his palm over his forehead and waited there several seconds. He stood there overhead and closed his eyes with him as his hand began to gain spirit energy with gradual and slow increments. He stood there with his spirit energy resonating overtop his forehead until Sean's face grew thin and calmer and after several seconds of time he began breathing slow in a steady deep sleep and was passed out before they knew it.

“Alright then that should be enough. I'll check on him periodically until he awakens in this time period, until then.” Master Shin turned around and walked out the shrine area into the sunlight basking throughout his garden. The casual wind blew and could be heard as the air grew silent and the slight misty air grew thick around the whole area and landscape. Everything stood still as if time stopped itself and Sean's body laid there peaceful and quiet as the silent white air.

Several days passed as Master Shin lived and meditated while checking periodically on Sean's physical and spiritual state. After four days of time passing Master Shin went to check on Sean's body again only to find him completely gone from his post and bedside without a trace or sign of where he possibly was. He looked around and called out to him to try to find and discover his location and whereabouts.

“Hey, boy! Where are you exactly, you best be still here because I still have much information to tell you before you leave. You can't navigate the continent grounds on your own, so I hope you didn't leave the area and are still here! Yell back if you hear what I am saying now,” Master Shin yelled. He walked around as he listened during the quiet air and heard him speaking past a couple plants and trees. He walked by and saw him striking and throwing several punches and kicks in the air. He kept swinging away until he saw Master Shin come into view and then halted and greeted him upon coming into eye contact.

“Oh, hey what's up. I'm here, sorry if it seemed like I was missing. I wanted to get my body back in shape after sleeping for so long. I already ate some food from your kitchen and

used your restroom without you knowing after I found it in the house, I hope that was ok and you didn't mind," Sean said.

"Yes, yes, that's fine. I said I would serve you after anyway, this way it only saves more time now. But anyways now then, let me give you the information you need to know about. You want to know your teammates whereabouts right?" Master Shin said.

"Yes, very much please. Where are they exactly right now if you know?" Sean said.

"Right, so as I was about to say, I got in contact with Noah during your hibernation period and he told me he and his brother were going off early to the Mountain Zone to partake in the challenge. They said you can catch up with them if you want too and when you got the chance but he mentioned his brother Adam was growing impatient and wanted to start getting in on the action as soon as he could. So he got convinced to go as early as they could after their preliminary victories and discovering their teammate members. So if you find them you need to get over there and see what their up to right about now because I think they were only planning on staying there a few days or so I heard."

"Alright, cool but how do I get there?"

"That's easy you just fly?"

"Fly? I can fly? Really? How do I do that?"

"Well first off visualize equipping your spirit weapons again. You can summon them at will, I automatically got them registered for you while you were sleeping. Just imagine yourself wearing them now."

"Alright... then." Sean closed his eyes and proceeded to visualize himself wearing the two gloves he remembered from that time he held them in his hands. A moment passed and two gloves materialized around his hands as he opened his eyes back again. He looked at his hands in wonder and excitement.

"Wow, that was cool. I can't believe I did that so easily like that," Sean said with a bright smile on his face while staring at his new equipment.

"Yes, you did splendidly. Now remember that feeling, you don't actually have to close your eyes like that every time to wear them, you can materialize with them open at will you know. If you did, then you'd just be leaving yourself vulnerable for your opponent to attack you and get off a first strike. So remember how it felt and just summon them with your eyes open from now on." Master Shin said.

"Ok, roger."

"Now then, all you have to do is do the same thing you did in the preliminaries except now with your feet. Visualize your spirit energy flowing down your legs and being channeled out of your feet area and push. And simply by doing that you'll be able to control and channel them out and use the energy to fly around in the sky with."

"Ok, I'll try it right now then." Sean closed his eyes and began visualize the energy, his legs felt stiff as he struggled to relax and emit waves of pulses and energy down the course of his legs and attempt to emit it out the soles of his feet.

"Like I said you don't have to close them but oh well, whatever makes you comfortable on your first try."

He stood there calm until a flash of blue light lit up on both feet and began resonating and emitting a small amount of noise through the air for them both to hear.

"Yes, yes. That's it, now push like I said and you should lift up in the air nice and easy."

He stood there silent and spread his arms out until several moments passed and he began to lift in the air in slow motion. He opened his eyes to witness his body hovering above the

ground and his face was shocked with wonder and joy as he looked down at his feet suspended over the grass in which he once stood on.

“Wow, this is really happening! I can’t believe it! This is like so cool, man! I’m actually flying!” Sean said with an excited face.

“Well you’re not actually flying yet, you’re simply just hovering right now. Now just carry onto the next step and try to push yourself through the air like a mixture of you swimming and walking at the same time. Just sort of imagine what that is like and try to execute it through your mind, body, and spirit energy emission.”

“Ok.” Sean began to shift his feet and legs a little as he stood there hovering mid-air and after several moments he shot up and began swishing and swerving through the air and wind. After several leaps and bursts in the sky he gained momentum and shot through the air as natural as a dragonfly and he took flight and travelled across the dome like garden sky and carried a huge big smile across his face as he travelled through air in different directions.

“Wow, this is great. Flying is a lot easier than I thought! Whoo-hoo! Yeah!” Sean screeched out flying around like free bird.

“Yes, flying doesn’t take very long but you seem to be a natural at it. Some people it may take a day or more or several hours to do but you seem to got it down packed just nicely.”

“Yeah,” Sean stopped in mid-air and looked down at the master with a major grin, “thanks, a lot for everything all of this stuff and help is much appreciated Master Shin, thank you.”

“You’re very welcome. Now then carry on now, go meet up with your friends and do your little challenge and everything. Once you’re done come back here so that I can train you properly and teach you more about spirit energy and teach you the famous Spirit Shot you need to learn. You don’t really need it right now for this challenge or anything so you’ll be fine as you are, I’d say you’re strong enough to handle yourself for now.”

“Ok, thanks a lot. And yes I’ll be back for sure, gladly. So like...where do I leave out of?” Sean said as he stood there hovering over him.

“I’ll open that circular airway at the top of the garden dome area with my energy and then you can fly off toward the mountain village. Go in that direction and you’ll see a number of treehouses that will indicate where you need to go. You can’t miss it once you just keep flying in that direction, make sure not to get lost now,” Master Shin said pointing.

“Ok cool, I will,” Sean said.

“Alright, I’ll open it now.” Master Shin lifted his hand up and encapsulated it with spirit energy. He pointed it toward the ceiling as he moved it in a slow motion the top circle like object began to move in sync with his hand until it was completely open for Sean to fit and fly straight out of the garden dome area. “There we are now, I got it open for you to head out anytime.”

“Ok, cool. I’ll head out right now, thanks for everything master. I’ll see you again soon.”

“Alright, now. I will see when in a few, stay safe out there.”

Sean shot up through the air and blasted straight out of the open circled airway until he was completely out of sight of Master Shin’s view and vantage point.

Sean came into view of the mountain terrain as he flew overhead, he soared down and landed his feet firm on ground to what looked like a massive wooden treetop village. Treehouses cascaded the walls and bark off trees that almost looked infinite heights, although their tops were in view if one looked up far enough to witness their elongated dark peaks. Alleyways and paths of rope stretched across each side of each tree, constructing bridges of many lengths that expand

far across the village. Houses stood suspended against each tree, highlighting the aesthetic and diversity of the area with their unique design and architecture in relation to modern counterparts.

Sean looked up at the treehouses and wondered to himself what type of people lived there. He turned his head forward after a while of staring and saw what looked like to him a plethora of huts and tipis. His curiosity peaked and he began walking towards the huts with excitement. He treaded light along the silk smooth grass and as he came further into view the small community before him became more clear to him. Many people were scattered about, doing different tasks and activities, the people looked like some kind of indigenous decent because of their clothing and attire comprised of animal skins, feathers, and primitive nature based clothes and demeanor.

Some members carried spears and with some placed by their side, a vast variety of tools were riddled throughout the camp, huddled together with firewood, sticks, stones, and other miscellaneous materials scattered about. Sean came further in hoping to greet one of them until a loud screech blasted sharp through his ears. He halted himself and looked around with his nerves on guard. He shifted his head fast as his instincts guided him toward a shady man in a sophisticated uniform carrying a young brown skinned girl in his arms. The man was dashing as fast as he could toward the outer area of the village with no signs of letting up or stopping. Sean reacted quick and leapt straight into the air and speeded over toward the shady man until he came straight into view, forcing the man's eyesight to be shifted straight toward him as he was suspended airborne in the sky before him.

"Hey man, what are you doing to that little girl?" Sean said. "I don't want any trouble but I just can't ignore this."

The man's face cracked, his sharp teeth shone white with his big helmet huddled firm on his head. He gave a mean smirk as he reached down into his side of his hip with his freehand.

"What's it to you, kid? Mind your own business. I don't know where you came from but I'm not gonna let some punk get in my way."

He shifted his gun out the holster and aimed it straight at Sean's face. Bullets came firing out in sharp, swift intervals but Sean's instincts reacted to them all in a heartbeat. He dodged and wavered himself through the air past the bullets and took a rapid dash at the man and launched a strong steadfast punch to his gut area. The man's stomach caved in and twirled around. Sean's fist stood firm gaping into his stomach and then after minor seconds passed he retracted his arm and stood tall, firm and confident until the man had to bring his arms in coughing and wheezing while releasing his firm grip on the girl. The girl wailed and cried as she ran toward Sean from the shady man. Sean patted her side as she ran around his back side behind his legs and gripped his jeans tight. The shady man with his rough helmet gasped in and wheezed deep breathes as he clenched his round stomach in tight with one arm. He struggled to barely stand as he stared the two down with his vile anger and irritable emotion.

"You damn kid, you'll pay for that," cried the angry man.

"I'll go another round if you want it," Sean responded taunting him.

The man sucked his teeth in glaring at him with utter annoyance, he fell almost to one knee while utilizing his other free hand to lever himself up. After he gained more strength he reached toward his other wrist with his with his gut clenching hand as a mechanical watch appeared all of a sudden on his arms other wrist. He pressed a few button on the touch screened sensor device and pointed it to an open space. A small ball of light shot out of the small watch and before both appeared a large retro style looking hovercraft with multiple appliances and a sleek, cyberpunk unique design. The shady man went back to his watch and pressed a few more

buttons before it lit up bright and dematerialized before him. Sean, him, and the little girl stared back at each other with wonder and assurance.

“I’ll get you for this kid, I know your face and I’ll let my buddies know about this and what you did. This isn’t over, we’ll be back,” the shady man said as he entered the vehicle and began initiating the ignition.

“I’ll be waiting then,” Sean responded with confidence.

The shady man gave him an evil grin and pulled a trigger which boosted the hovercraft several inches in the air and drove off before the traveling could catch up to him and his high speeds across the wind. The little girl came around from Sean’s leg area and looked up at him with bright innocent eyes.

“Thank you mister, that man was really scary,” said the little tribal girl.

Sean looked down at her with an open smile. “No problem, but what did that bad man want with you?”

“I don’t know, he just suddenly came and kidnapped me.”

“Oh, I see. Well let’s try to get you back home then.”

The little girl nodded at Sean and proceeded to take his hand. They walked over toward the huts until they saw a boy figure come speeding straight toward. He had exotic tribal clothing on and a rough bandana over his forehead. He came running out of a nearby tent as he started looking around with furious exhaustion, he spotted both of them as they were walking towards the village and ran over with much haste as he got closer to them and caught his breathe.

“Thank goodness, you’re safe. Ishana, I had heard you were kidnapped by a shady man with a helmet. This boy here doesn’t look the sort...” said the strange boy.

“I’m alright big brother, this nice guy saved me,” said the little girl now with a name.

“Yeah, we just got done dealing with this guy, he was trying to kidnap her I think so I stopped him in his tracks before he could,” said Sean.

“You saved my sister? I can’t get tell you how much I am in your debt. Thank you,” said the tribal boy.

“Yeah, no problem. I just couldn’t leave her like that, you know?”

“Yes, yes. Anyways my name is Akheem. Akheem Johnson, but most of my close friends call me AJ for short, you are welcome to as well. Nice to meet you. And this is my sister Ishana.”

Sean nodded at them both with an uplifting smirk. “Nice to meet you both, my name’s Sean. I saw those tents and tipis and thought they’d be interesting, wanted to ask more about the area since I’m new here.”

“Alright then, I’ll take you to my father and grandfather, they’ll be happy to help you on your journey and give you the information you need.”

“Ok thanks, sounds good.”

“Then let us be off,” AJ waved over his hand toward him at Ishana and reached his hand out, “come on Ishana.”

Ishana leapt forward and took her brother’s hand. They began walking forward heading further into the outlandish tribal village. People of all sorts of sizes and genders were scattered about, they all look hot basking in the red sun all day with their brown and dark skin. Different activities were going on around campfires and tools could see in all directions with bones and animal carcasses huddled around random spots on the ground. The area gave off a very exotic and ethnic atmosphere and Sean began to bask in how unique and interesting his surroundings were before him. He was excited to see what would happen next to him around the corner at any time. They came up to a main large space area near the center of the village. A few men were

seen around a lit campfire, one of them a tall strong man with a spear in held his hand, while another old man with a Native American headdress sat on a log next to him with another man next to him. AJ went up to them and presented a welcoming hand gesture toward Sean to them. They turned their heads toward him escaping their conversation and Sean looked back with a approachable expression across his face.

“Father, grandfather. I would like you meet a new friend of mine. His name is Sean, he saved Ishana’s life by himself.”

“What? What happened to Ishana?” responded his father while grasping the spear hard.

“Nothing anymore, she’s fine now,” responded AJ, “like I said this gentleman here saved her life.”

The two men looked over at Sean which caused his face cave in a little forcing him to smile back. The man with the spear took a step forward and looked over at him and did short bow.

“I’m forever in your debt. You don’t know how much my daughter means to me and my family,” said the man

“Oh, it’s no problem,” Sean said with an awkward expression, “I was just doing what I felt I had to in the moment. I couldn’t just leave her like that.” Sean rubbed the back of his head while smiling at then came back to a slight more serious face. “But what’s the deal anyway? Why was that guy trying to kidnap the little girl? He looked like some kind of officer of some sort.”

“Yes, I believe he was a part of the Spirit World Military Police force, people say military police for short. There have been rumors going around of a party kidnapping innocent people, especially young children,” responded AJ.

“What, really? Why would anyone want to do that? Aren’t the cops supposed to be the good guys? Why would they be kidnapping innocent young girls for?”

AJ shook his head in contempt. “I do not know but what I do know is not all of the police are bad. There are still many good policemen out there risking their lives to catch criminals still every day. I just suspect that there may be some hidden faction going on in the police or conspiracy breeding together bad cops for some awful plan. That’s the only explanation we could come up with, otherwise Ishana wouldn’t have been suddenly kidnapped like that.”

Sean looked at him with wonder and amazement. “Wow, I never knew something like that was going on here. That must suck if you don’t know which cops are good are bad out there.”

“Well yes that is true but anyway, Sean I would like to introduce you to my father and grandfather, lead hunter Amaru and Chief Taka,” AJ said presenting his hands towards them in a welcoming fashion.

“Ah, yes. Good day to you. I’m sorry for not introducing myself to you earlier, like my son said my name is Amaru, I am the main lead hunter of our tribe,” the buff man said extending his arm toward Sean.

“Yeah, nice to meet you. My name’s Sean.” Sean reached and took his hand, clasping on to his firm grip and smiled back at him in a casual manner.

“And yes, this is my father Chief Taka, he is the head elder of the village here,” Amaru said pointing towards him.

“Nice to meet you too,” Sean replied

“It’s a pleasure,” the old man nodded, “I appreciate what you have done for my granddaughter. It brings me great joy that there are still good people like you even of youth still

existing in this world of cruelty and sorrow. I give many thanks to your kind deeds.” The old man gave a genuine smirk to Sean as his eyes closed and Sean looked back at him bashful rubbing his head trying to find the right words to say next.

“Ah, it’s no big deal. Like I said I couldn’t just sit by while a little girl was getting kidnapped you know. I had to do something.”

“Well we are much appreciated for your kindness,” Amaru said smiling. The old man shifted his weight and plopped his wooden cane further in the ground and looked back at Sean with an eager facial expression.

“Now then, young man. What brings you here to our village? Surely you had a reason for stopping by, we’ve only had a select few visitors in the recent years. This place is called Treehouse Village and we are the Village of Shamans, those people up there are referred as the treehouse villagers or the villagers they can be referred to for short. We welcome you into our domain with great virtue and generosity, but we ask this because most people though are more interested in the mountain treehouses upon visiting, so I must ask why it is you are with us today,” Chief Taka said.

“Ah, yes I almost forgot. Chief Taka, sir. I came to this area to find my teammates, you see I’m a participant in the tournament and I heard that some of my team members may be over here. So I just jetted over to come see and you guys we’re the closest to the area that I landed at. Also while I’m here I heard you guys have a Dojo Challenge in this zone. So I wanted to knock out two birds with one stone and probably do that as well,” Sean responded in a long winded fashion.

“Ok, I see,” The old man began rubbing his shrouded beard in, “yes, I figured you’d say that, about the Dojo Challenge I mean. I am not too sure about your teammates but I do know that the Mountain Challenge your looking for is just up there on that tower.” The old man turned over and pointed his cane straight up towards a huge towering tree lodged with multiple protruding houses all carrying up to the near top of the tree. The tree peaked far above all the other trees and treehouses in the area and made its clear dominance of uniqueness over the surrounding area.

“That there is called Treetop Tower, and there you will find the Mountain Dojo near the very top of that gargantuan tree. It has many different stages before you may get to the top and meet the Mountain Master but I’m sure after witnessing your feat today you should have no problem making it there,” the old man responded.

“Alright, sweet. I should probably head over there now and get started,” Sean said.

“Wait, before you go. I wanted to notify to you that in order to do this challenge you need at least three members of your party members present. They will not let you in unless you meet those conditions.”

Sean’s face caved in upon hearing him. “Really? Aw, damn. Well shit now I have to find my teammates then, do you have any idea where I can find them?”

“They may be up there now, near the treehouse to the entrance of the dojo. We had some young visitors come in not too long ago. I think it may have been yesterday, either that or a few days back. We forgot to mention that information to them as well so they probably will have some trouble getting into the dojo as we speak, please notify them our message when you arrive there for us,”

“Ok, so which one was it?” Sean asked.

“There, that treehouse just over there on the tower,” the chief said.

“Alright then, I won’t waste any time. Thanks for the directions.”

“No problem and don’t feel you need to be a stranger,” AJ added in, “your welcome any time to come to our village.”

“Yes, we would love to repay you properly before you had a chance to leave the area. We are having a small banquet tonight, and we would love for you to join us if you can,” stepped in Amaru with a gracious gesture.

“Yeah sure, thanks,” Sean nodded, “I love to eat, so I would be glad to join you guys.”

“Alright then, its settled we will see you later tonight then,” Amaru said.

“Ok, sounds good. Thanks so much for your hospitality. I didn’t think I’d make friends like this so quickly! I’ll be back when I can.” Sean said.

Sean proceeded to leap in the air and filled his feet with spirit energy and flew off as he looked back to witness them waving back towards him as he heightened more altitude. He gave a nice smirk at them and waved back and then turned around like a superhero lifting off and jetted straight through the air until he was out of sight.

Chapter 7

Sean came into view of the treehouse and halted himself stationary in the air to over his surroundings. The area was somewhat quiet with alone noises of certain villages in other neighboring treehouses exuding noise around him, he looked around at them and Sean's face shot with wonder and curiosity as he floated in the air.

"Wow, this place is pretty huge. It looks like there all kinds of people around here. Well, whatever I better not waste any time. Let me go straight to the dojo and ask around if they've seen anyone I know from my team."

Sean looked over to the treehouse of his destination and in slow motion descended toward the platform holding up the treehouse interconnected to the neighboring bridges. He glanced over at the protruding entrance and began to hear voices echoing off toward the open air around him. He began to walk forward with a slight bit of tension cascading down his spine and body but he stayed bold and walked forward until he came through the dark entrance and found three men before him as he came through the doorway. Two of the men were facing away from him with the other with his arms crossed by a doorway with serious expression across his face as if he was standing guard. Sean stood still as he listened in on what they were saying.

"C'mon man, just let us in!" shouted a large muscular man.

"I can't do that, sorry," responded the guard.

"Why the hell not? I told you I can take 'em by myself!" The buff guy cringed his teeth in as he lifted up his arm gripping his hands in tight faced toward the guard. His face was filled with rage and ferocity.

"No, can do like I said you need at least three team members to do this challenge. You ain't allowed in with just two or less."

"Just let it go brother. He's not gonna let us in," the other man next to him said.

"Alright fine then, who needs him, we'll find another way to get in then," the buff guy said with an irritated grin. "C'mon brother, let's get out of here."

The guy in the white coat turned to the guard and bowed. "I'm sorry for the inconvenience."

The buff guy began marching toward the doorway until he witnessed the boy with his hat backwards approaching him as he began to speak.

"Hey, how's it going I'm looking for two guys named Adam and Noah, have you two seen them?" Sean said.

“What’s up, you’re looking at them,” the buff guy said. “I’m Adam and he’s Noah, what the heck do you need us for?” He said pointing at his brother with smug look on his face.

“Yes, what is it that you needed from us?” Noah said while taking a step forward.

“Oh, nothing I just wanted to find my teammates. My names Sean, nice to meet you guys. I’m your newest team member or one of your team members rather, again nice to meet you,” Sean said laughing.

“Oh, cool! Perfect timing dude, you see we were just about to do the challenge but that lame guard there won’t let us in because we didn’t have three team mates or more. So now he can’t no excuse anymore and we can go in!” Adam said.

“Cool, I came to do the challenge as well actually. I’m ready to give the first one a chance since we’re allowed to take it early. So let’s go in then since I’m here,” Sean said with an excited smile.

“Yeah, let’s... Hey you, stupid guard guy! You heard the man, we have three teammates now so you have to let us in to challenge the dojo and battle the Master to win our medal,” Adam said pointing toward him.

“Sorry, no can do,” said the guard.

“What why not?” Adam said gripping his fist with his teeth gritted.

“I’ve been deeply offended by your approach for entering the dojo, we do not tolerate such misconduct and impropriety here in this dojo. And also the Master is tired and needs relaxation for today for personal matters, he will be better rested for tomorrow to challenge. But only if you come to the challenging grounds here again politely and nicely. That is all.” The guard gave off his eye content toward them and went back to a stoic facial expression looking in the distance like a statue. The boys looked at him with different reactions and emotions floating through the air and then Noah closed his eyes and waved his hand and head back and forth as he released a huge sigh in the air.

“Like I said brother it’s no use, let’s just follow the man’s orders since he’s still giving us a chance. If we try to force our way in now we’ll just be disqualified from the tournament. Let’s just call it a day and come back tomorrow,” Noah said.

“Fine, then. Alright, let’s go...” Adam said sucking in his teeth. “But we’ll be back tomorrow no doubt! So be prepared for us because we’re going to school this dojo in the ground when we get here tomorrow!” Adam said.

“Indeed, we shall see,” The guard said while still not giving eye contact.

“Alright, c’mon guys,” Noah said.

“Ok, I don’t mind. I can take the challenge whenever, it’s no big deal with me,” Sean said.

The boys walked out of the tribal doorway until they reached the main entrance in the outside area that stood before the neighboring trees and treehouses nearby. They turned to look at each other as they spoke and shook each other hands.

“Hi, my names Sean like I said in there again. Nice to meet you again,” Sean said.

“Yes, hello. My name is Noah like my brother introduced me before, and this is Adam like he said before, say hello again brother to be polite because that earlier meeting was hardly a proper meet up and introduction,” Noah said.

“Yeah, ok. Hey man, what’s up. The name’s Adam, how’s it going,” Adam said.

“Nothing much, but yeah like I said I’m Sean nice to meet you guys. So what do we do now then since we can’t actually start the challenge?” Sean asked.

"I don't know I guess hang around with the villagers here a bit I guess, but we don't really know these people that well here up in the treehouses, we just got a bit more acquainted with the shaman village down in the grassy plain area down there more when we got here," Adam said.

"Yes, they were very nice people. They welcomed and even let us spend the night before we we're ready to come up here and take the challenge," Noah said.

"Oh, that's great then. How about I take you guys over there then because I became good friends when I got there too, I actually saved their chief's daughter from these bad guys and became better acquainted that way. We can probably ask to spend the night over there and then come back this way tomorrow to do the challenge finally together now that we got three people."

"Alright, then it sounds like a plan. But how are you going bring us?" Noah asked.

"I can fly, so I'll just hold both of your arms and hands and carry you both down carefully so it would be faster," Sean said.

"Oh, wow you can fly. That's very interesting indeed. Yes, that would be convenient if you can carry the both of us that is, I hope we won't be too heavy for you. Is that ok with you brother?" Noah said.

"Yeah, it's cool. Whatever's quicker, it beats walking like how he had to do before to get all the way up here," Adam said.

"Alright, then take both my hands. And don't worry like I said I'm plenty strong," Sean said. The boys each went by his side and grabbed an opposing hand. He gripped then tight as he rose up slow through the air and began to cascade as steady rate down toward the shaman village in far out view down in the distance.

They came into view as Sean travelled light through the air, striving to maintain his balance as he held both of the boys in each hand with his firm, strong grip. They came down slow onto the grassy, plain land just in front of a big campfire open space area with Amaru and the elder and AJ all chatting away until they saw them come down and gave a big wave for them to come toward them.

"Hey, how is it going guys! I see you find them ok Sean. Was it hard to discover their whereabouts or did they show up just easy?" AJ asked.

"I found them just find, they were in the treehouse just like you guys said. But hey, we wanted to ask could we spend the night over here today since the guard got mad at us for trying to barge and said we'd have better luck partaking in the challenge tomorrow. So I wanted wanted to ask or rather we wanted to ask do you think we could spend the night here just for today and then go partake in the challenge tomorrow? I hope we won't be a huge burden on you guys," Sean said.

"Oh, no its perfectly fine. Of course you can stay, we at least owe you that much for what you did, right father?" AJ said looking proud up to his dad.

"Yes, son. We would gladly like to welcome your new found friends to our village for the night, we will be having a nice big dinner for everyone tonight so it would be nice if they would join us and partake in our mild feast. This is all ok with you as well father?" Amaru asked.

"Yes, yes, I see no problem with letting our guests stay as long as they please. We have become acquainted with all of them and like my grandson said before this is the least we could do for what you did for us before with saving my son's daughter," Chief Taka said.

"Ok, thank you very much," Noah said.

"Yes, thanks a lot chief," Sean said.

“Come, plenty of food should already be prepared for us to eat, you may eat early if you wish,” Amaru said. “We are not having a traditional banquet today so you do not have to stay at the dinner table long.”

“Alright, let’s go then,” Sean said.

“Yes, let’s” AJ responded.

The men all walked into a large neighboring tipi, a large wooden rectangular table extended throughout the wooden stick house. They huddled around the tables next to the other villagers tending the food and cooking and entering and exiting the hut back and forth while working the dinner.

“They are still preparing the rest in terms of quantity but feel free to eat as you please early on,” Amaru said.

“Wow, thanks. It all looks great,” Sean said.

“Yes, thank you very much, say thank you to the nice people brother,” Noah said.

“Oh, yeah. Thanks a lot man, this all looks great. We’re very grateful for all this you know, so yeah thanks a lot,” Adam said.

“Oh it’s no problem at all, here let me hand you these plates we have and forks and spoons,” AJ responded. He walked over a few steps and picked up small ceramic bowls and wooden spoons and forks coupled with it. He handed them to each guest and proceeded to speak to his family members.

“Father, grandfather do you wish to eat now as well?” AJ asked.

“No, we do not at the moment. We wish to eat our dishes later when we are ready, we each have a lot of work to do and other personal matters to attend,” Amaru said.

“Yes, I will take my leave and come back to take my meal later as well,” Chief Taka said. “You boys take care now and feel free to take your meals as you please anywhere as you please, you do not have to eat at the dinner table after all today since the villagers today all seem busy and do not wish to meet for a collective banquet like we normally do on special occasions.”

“Alright, thank you, we will,” Sean said.

“Yes, thank you very much for everything,” Noah said.

“Yeah, thanks a lot,” Adam said.

“Alright, then. We shall take our leave,” Chief Taka said. The chief and burly hunter man walked out of the ancient tipi as AJ turned toward them and looked at them big with a modest and light hearted smile.

“Alright, then boys. I hope you will enjoy your stay while you are here. We will be around the village if you need us, so feel free to contact me or my family if you need anything important or have something to ask that you do not know about,” AJ said.

“Ok, thank you, we will contact you guys if we need anything,” Sean said.

“Yes, we much appreciate the hospitality you have given us today. We will notify you if we need anything else important that we do not understand,” Noah said.

“Alright, then. I should take my leave as well. Like we said or if we haven’t then feel free to explore the village at your leisure, the tipi just straight across this tipi here past the campfire is my personal house and I have extra beds for the three of you prepared for guest when you are ready to sleep. Feel free to come and go when you please to rest there,” AJ said.

“Ok, thank you. That sounds great,” Sean said.

“Well then, I will head out too to attend my personal matters, call me if you need anything else. Thank you,” AJ said. He bowed to them all and turned around and walked out of the tent leaving the three of them to attend to their plates and food at their leisure. They each

basked in the variety of meats, fruits, nuts, and exotic nutrition before them. After they some time they each filled their small rectangular bowls with sustenance and then proceeded to look at each other to discuss their following actions.

“Well, I’m going to take their offer and take this to go,” Adam said, “I can get some exercise in for the mean time after I eat in preparation for tomorrow. I’ll just explore the village while I chow down and then go for a good jog around the village and area and explore the outskirts of the mountain area as well. I don’t know man I just feel that’s what I should do, for some reason I can’t sit still after that retarded guard pissed me off today,” Adam said with a grunted and upset facial expression.

“Alright, that’s fine. You do what you want. Sean and I will stay here and get better acquainted. We probably won’t talk here but rather around the village or in another area as well outside of it too. How does that sound to you Sean,” Noah said looking at him.

“Oh, yeah that’s fine. Anything works for me, I’m just ready to get to know and each other and to eat and relax,” Sean said.

“Alright, then guys. See you all later, I’m heading out. I’ll see you guys around for the challenge tomorrow.” Adam turned around with his bowl and spoon and fork in hand while they waved him away walking out.

“Alright, see you later then,” Noah said. “Well now, let’s head out too, I think this place might be to cramped for us to talk and get to know each other here. Let’s go outside and get some fresh air while we eat and we can meet up and discuss any subjects you like too.”

“Ok, do you like analysis, philosophy, and just analyzing life and morality in general?” Sean asked with a modest face.

“Oh, yes I do like those subjects very much. Analyzing, concepts, philosophy, morality, and life in general are topic I enjoy greatly to discuss when I can,” Noah responded.

“All right, so let’s go out and find a good wooden area with a modest amount of trees and logs nearby the village and talk about those things and life overall there. I’m really good at coming up with ideas and cool and unique subjects to talk about,” Sean said.

“Ok, then. So now let’s be off then,” Noah said.

“Ok, then after you,” Sean said.

They each walked out of the tipi hut and left the banquet area without a trace or sign of their earlier presence.

Chapter 8

The sun's glare shone strong and bright with a basking radiance in the evergreen woodlands and forestry. Sean and Noah walked forward together through the snapping sticks and leaves, treading further away from the campsite of the shaman village behind them. They kept treading along the murky earth until they discovered a small area of logs and old campfire twigs all housed in one neat spot. They huddled around the dead campfire and sat down on neighboring logs while placing their half-filled bowls by each of their sides. Noah dusted off his jacket while sitting down while Sean with his hand rested on his neck began to crack it in and around several directions. They adjusted their composites and then looked at each other both in the eye and smiled both for a brief moment until Noah began to speak.

"Well, alright then. So where should we start?" Noah said.

Sean huddled himself on a neighboring log and took a casual look to the ground.

"Alright, so we need some interesting topics to discuss, right?" Sean responded.

"Yeah," Noah nodded.

"Well let's just start talking about social issues then. Social issues and all the problems in the world both on the planet Earth and Other Earth here. Life in general you know like social issues, morality and humanity as a whole, things like that. That seems simple enough, right?"

"Yeah, that sounds good."

Sean gave off a contemplated facial expression and for a brief moment put his fingers to his chin. "So I think the first thing is we should start talking about social issues in society and why human beings aren't morally in check as a whole. And this isn't politics, we're interested in talking about morality and social issues on that scale, there's a big distinction between the two. Humanity likes to group the two together when they are completely two different things."

"Ok, then," Noah waved his hand to him with light gesture, "so elaborate on what you want to talk about exactly."

"Well, personally I think human beings have been on this planet too long to be still so immoral to each other and when I say on this planet I mean back on Earth and here on Other Earth, so keep that in mind when I refer to that." Sean laid his body back down on the ground and looked up toward the sky with his hands behind his head while shooting a casual stoic facial expression.

"Ok, I will keep that in mind then. Feel free to continue," Noah said as he reached in his jacket pocket while lighting a cigarette.

“So yeah, I think all these problems like racism and sexism still being here are simply ridiculous and should stop once and for all, you know? All this racism, sexism, or anything like that and discrimination of any sort should cease finally, and of course I respect all nations and countries laws concerning the LGBTQ if it’s illegal to be LGBTQ in their country and nation back on Earth but homophobia needs to be dealt with as well, you know? I think we should finally progress as human beings and stop being so hateful to each other,” Sean said while still gazing at the sky.

“Yeah, yeah. I hear you. That’s what the organization I’m with centers around, helping and supporting the welfare and wellbeing of all people and trying to end all forms of discrimination one step at a time,” Noah said.

“Yeah, I’ve been meaning to ask you about that,” Sean said looking over at him, “what’s that place called again? I noticed seeing those letters on your coat.”

“It’s called the PHD Department, or at least that’s the casual and colloquial way the citizens refer to it as. It stands simply for Philanthropy Department, the extra department in the name for the acronym is there only to refer to it easier when you say it that way but basically that’s the name of our organization. We are a human rights nonprofit organization collaborated solely to promote and develop human welfare worldwide. We’re around to help people in anyway, protest, hand out food to the poor and homeless, give donations, pump up rallies, and any other social activity you can think of,” Noah said while blowing a plethora of smoke in the air.

“Wow, that sounds pretty cool. I should check it out sometime.”

“Yeah, we got our main headquarters in the central area of Main City. Stop on by whenever you need help with anything because we have a counseling department, or you can just come by simply to say hello, which is fine as long as I’m not in a meeting.”

“Ok, that sounds pretty good,” Sean said looking back to the sky.

“Well, so back on topic. What are your methods for advocating for positive and peaceful change? Because our methods should seem obvious to you, we go around and protests peacefully, build rallies, schedule speeches, etc. But I was interested if you had any plans of your own to promote change in a significant way if you had any,” Noah said while hovering his cigarette up.

“Oh, yeah I was going to get to that. So I don’t think I have told you yet how much a certain person’s influence has been on my life, well I guess I’m dead now since I’m in the afterlife but you get what I mean,” Sean said looking over to him laughing. The person’s name is 2Pac, Tupac Amaru Shakur being his full name,” Sean said.

Noah closed his eyes and took a few nods. “Yes, yes. I am familiar with him and his music. He really did a lot for social change with his music during his lifetime and career.”

“Right!” Sean said with excitement. “You really feel his music! I’m such a big fan of him and in my opinion his music is like an instruction manual on how to change the world. His music really stands out like that from the rest, at least in my opinion.”

Noah took his cigarette in, inhaled and then exhaled another wad of smoke. He rested his nerves while contemplating to himself for a brief moment.

“Well, I think most people would actually agree with you on that, anyone that’s familiar with his music especially I mean. He was a natural activist shooting for change during his career.”

Sean shot his body up in excitement facing him crossed legged with a big smirk on his face. “Yeah, he was wasn’t he! I remember liking several interviews on him I’ve seen online. He

has quite a few let me think... Oh, so like he had one interview where he talked about sharing money with the poor and how it's a shame there can be so many rich people when there's people starving and homeless in the streets. He was very real in the interview and even pointed at the screen and expressed how all races and people need to understand each other to survive and have equality."

"Yeah, it is a shame to have so much money circulating everywhere worldwide and we got so many homeless and poor people with less or without almost anything of their own. That's what my department is trying to fix one step at a time. We can't stay like this with people having all this wealth and riches while so many people worldwide are poor and struggling," Noah said.

"Yeah, I agree. But I also think it's not necessarily a bad thing if you enjoy your wealth, you know? I think enjoying your wealth and money is fine, especially since it's human instinct. But I also think we should share more often with the poor, you know. People should be open to giving some of their money out consistently to those in need more often in this life." Sean gave a perplexed look as he closed his eyes in slow.

"I think if we gave like even say a dollar or so... Yeah so if every human on earth gave at least a dollar to a ghetto community or low income area and we did that everywhere then we would be alright more or less, being the poor and struggling I mean," Sean said.

"Yes, I agree if we did something as simple like that things would be better...but...unfortunately things aren't the case or anything like that because of things like greed and power," Noah said while taking in another wad of smoke as he blew it out.

"Yeah...that sucks...I know. If people took one moment to stop being greedy for once and one moment they'd realize how much these people worldwide need help. Especially black people need help out here, you know? There like the poorest race out here and they really need help in the struggle out here in this world. Like I said before though enjoying your wealth is fine, but there's still no excuse to not try to help at all or sometimes when you can, you know?" Sean said laying back down looking up at the sky.

"Yeah, I hear you. It's a damn shame the way the world works with all this corruption and poverty in the world."

"And speaking of that, with you saying the way the world works and all that. I don't really understand something, it's been bugging me for a while now even with most of my time on Earth before I died and came here."

"What's that?"

"Why are so many human beings immoral to each other?" Sean said looking at him with a perplexed face.

Noah took a moment to take a deep breath and reposition himself while leveling his cigarette. "Well, tell me what exactly is on your mind on the subject."

"Yeah, ok so I mean like why are we still on this planet after being here so long and we still have to deal with all these problems and everything?"

Noah stood there silent as the wind blew soft strokes surrounding them. The air pressure felt as if it stopped at a halt, forcing the grass and leaves to stride in swift, sharp motion across the bedrock earth.

"I'm saying why do these problems still exist today? What's up with that?"

Noah looked at the ground for a brief moment and proceeded then to speak. "Well, probably the same answer as like before. With greed and power comes immorality and disrespect."

“I see, well I don’t understand it really. I’m not a very mannerly person but I don’t see why it’s so hard to treat black people and other races equally and to be respectful to women. And like I said I respect countries and nations anti-gay laws but what about gays and lesbians, and all the other members of the LGBTQ categories? Where’s their respect? Why aren’t they being treated equally?” Sean asked perplexed more.

Noah began to nod his head even more to his words with his cigarette in hand. “Yes, yes. I hear you. The equality isn’t there completely; we still have so much to work for. As I keep saying that’s what my department is about, human welfare of all types and progress for humanity. But back to the topic, yes I think women should be treated with respect along with the other social groups you mentioned before. Black people, women, and LGBTQ people have been going through too much oppression through the years. Especially with black women with them having to deal with racism and sexism at the same time. That double oppression must be hard to deal with so black women should be treated with respect and equally as well to be more specific.”

“Yeah and there’s so many other social groups besides those mentioned before that are being oppressed every day, like introverts. Introverts are oppressed in societies worldwide every day. Oh, I was meaning to ask you Noah before, are you an introvert yourself?”

Noah took another swab of his cigarette to blow in the air. “Yes, I am one. How’d you figure it out?”

“Well, I just noticed you’re a pretty chill guy. I just kind of got the vibe while meeting you but I just wasn’t too sure yet, until now upon asking you,” Sean said.

“Well you hit it right on the money. I’m a natural introvert. I manage to do my best at work and organize and administer social events and speeches to the best of my ability. But it is a lot of work and I get drained at the end of the day, especially if I’ve been around a lot of people that particular day,” Noah said.

“I see.”

“So yes, I would say I am an introvert but I’m not particular shy all that much, at least most of the time. Those are two different things which is a common misconception between people. Introverts come in all shapes and sizes. There are introverts among every race in this world. Extroverts and introverts both live in this world together alike.”

“Right, right. I’m an extrovert so that’s why I asked. So that’s cool to know and confirm but alright back on subject again so. After discussing I think I just came up with an idea to fix all these problems finally in the world!” Sean said.

“Really, what’s that?” Noah said.

“Proud statements! Proud statements and Thug Life that is, along with 2Pac’s “Changes” song of course as well.”

“Ok, explain further what you mean by that.”

“Alright, cool so yeah Tupac Shakur made Thug Life into an acronym that meant The Hate U Gave Little Infants Fucks Everybody. It’s an acronym that means that the hate that you gave underdogs, the oppressed, and underrepresented people screws everyone and all of society. This acronym connects to thugs, gangsters, and niggas since their oppressed in society in the world but also it connects and relates to people in other categories like black people, women, and so on that are oppressed, hated on, detested by society worldwide. And like I said what’s great about this acronym is that it applies to all underdogs and underrepresented people so even like introverts, black introverts, poor people, LGBTQ people, the have-nots, starving people, manga and anime fans, comic book fans, gamers, impoverished people, old people, homeless people and

so on can also relate to this T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E. acronym. That's what's great about Thug Life." Sean said.

"I see, that's very interesting. I can see why so many could relate to that as well," Noah said.

"Right? So yeah, Thug Life is for all underdogs and underrepresented people. Pac defined his definition of a thug as an underdog in society who struggle and finally overcomes hardships and succeeds in life because he overcame all obstacles in his *Tupac: Resurrection*, so that's why thugs, gangsters, and niggas can relate to it along with all those other types of people in some of those other categories I mentioned before can relate to it as well in life. So basically Pac's definition of Thug Life is Underdog Life and he's trying to empower all underdogs in society that are hated on and oppressed by the overrepresented and richer people in society in the world," Sean said.

"That sounds really relatable, for sure. I'm glad 2Pac made Thug Life in that way for all underrepresented people like that. There's a lot of people that aren't white male's or overrepresented people and rich in society, so that acronym really can relate to a lot of people in the struggle in this world," Noah said.

"Yeah and the next thing is the proud statement idea. So I came up with a simple and amazing idea of making a list of statements saying things like I'm black and I'm proud and so on! That's it! I've figured out how to fix all these problems and clean up all these social issues with this! And it can apply to all underrepresented people in this world," Sean said proudly.

"I see, that is a great idea. You can empower the underdogs and underrepresented people with idea, it's spectacular for sure," Noah said.

"Yeah, it is isn't it? And I can even expand it and make other statements and things to say through the proud statement concept and idea. This is getting really exciting to just think about right now, man I can't wait to get started on it!" Sean said with an ecstatic face.

"I'm sure you can't wait. Do you need pieces of paper and writing utensils to work with?"

"Oh yeah, most definitely. We're gonna need that to get started and get this going. Do you have any on you?" Sean asked.

"Yeah, give me one moment." Noah held his hand out and a load of materials materialized in front of him. "We can use these right here, I summoned a number of papers and pencils for us to work with here," Noah said while taking another wad of smoke and blowing it out.

"Wow, I didn't know you could do that kind of thing in this world. Can you teach me how to do that sometime?"

"Yes, I'll tell you more about it later but let's get started on the work now that you mentioned it so passionately to me here today."

"Oh, yeah sure. So basically we'll spend a few hours working on these sheets of paper and write together a list of proud statements out to fix and change the world and all its problems and issues. We can use 2Pac's "Changes" songs to fix all these problems and social issues mostly so we're probably going to be using and mentioning that song here in these statements quite a lot. So be ready to do that mostly while we're working," Sean said.

"Ok, that sounds perfect. If there's not anything else to say then let's get started right away then," Noah said.

"Nope, I've said everything I've had too. Let's hop right in and get this movement going already!" Sean said.

“Alright, understood,” Noah said.
“Now, let’s get started then,” Sean said.
“Alright,” Noah said.

Chapter 9

Noah passed the papers to Sean as he sat there silent in the quiet forest grounds. They scribbled away for several hours with intense focus and attention to their pages. They looked up quick as time further passed and until they both settled their pages down and then proceeded to pass each other's papers to read.

Proud List

#1

Proud Statements

1. It's time to work toward world peace with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song on this planet Earth and I'm proud to understand that. Let's work toward world peace on a significant scale as human beings on this planet Earth and 2Pac's "Changes" song can help us do that so all these problems, social issues, and all this starvation and poverty worldwide can finally cease on this planet Earth once and for all and I'm proud to understand that and support significant social change while supporting working toward world peace on a massive scale on this planet Earth with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
2. I believe 2Pac's song "Changes" should be used as an international anthem on the planet Earth to work toward world peace and I'm proud to believe that. Let's as human beings on the planet Earth heed to the message in 2Pac's "Changes" song and work toward having world peace for all while striving to help all poor people that are struggling worldwide from poverty and starvation with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song as well and I'm proud to understand that. With the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song it would be great to see significant social change world wide and inspiration put into the hearts and lives of all people in the struggle worldwide. If your poor, starving, and in the struggle out there in this world then don't give up hope out there and embrace inspiration in your life through all the pain and suffering, don't let the world's problems like poverty, world hunger, oppression towards underrepresented people, starvation, hardship, pain, and suffering out there in the world get to you, continue to stay strong through all the pain, hatred, suffering, and hardship. I respect all nations and countries with laws concerning the LGBTQ, atheist, agnostics, and specific laws concerning women in their respective

country and nation on this planet. Countries and nations on this planet Earth can choose to disregard or acknowledge any statements stated in these proud statements below concerning the LGBTQ, atheist, agnostics, and women in their country and nation if they have anti-gay laws and specific laws based around those other categories mentioned that exist in their respective country and nation on this planet. I only hope 2Pac's "Changes" song helps the world work toward peace, equality, and eventual significant and permanent positive social change on this planet Earth for all humans. If we're going to live together as human beings on this planet then humanity has to peacefully analyze and settle the issues and oppression surrounding black people, black women, the LGBTQ, women, poor people and other underrepresented and oppressed people in societies worldwide and we can handle these issues if we as humans peacefully help clean up these issues and work toward world peace on this planet Earth with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. Let's work toward world peace with 2Pac's song "Changes" one step at a time as a human race before we do something drastic that we can never take back like entering World War III on this planet Earth and I'm sure nobody wants that and I'm proud to understand that. If it is ever possible let's try to look past our differences with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song as a human race and finally fully attempt to respect and understand each other on this planet Earth. 2Pac's "Changes" song can help us do that as a human race and bring world peace to this world that we all live in. Let's do our part to help the community in places worldwide as humans on this planet, if we all do our part as people on this planet then we can change the world together. Let's use 2Pac's "Changes" to help do that and help work toward world peace in this world and finally end these issues like poverty, starvation, immorality, famine, war, pain, global warming issues, corruption, fossil fuel issues, greed, suffering, struggle, hardship, and every other issue worldwide and I'm proud to understand that and support 2Pac's "Changes" song to help work toward world peace and support fixing these issues that reside on this planet Earth. Everybody that is poor and struggling worldwide, don't worry, never give up and always have hope. Embrace inspiration in your life and always believe in yourself no matter how hard life gets for you and your family, listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and keep believing in yourself in this hard life always. We can work toward world peace as human beings on this planet Earth if we all work together and use 2Pac's "Changes" to make a positive difference in the world. I'm proud to understand all that and work toward world peace with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song while inspiring people that are poor and in the struggle worldwide.

3. It's time to end homelessness once and for all on this planet Earth with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that. Let's share money and food with all people in the struggle worldwide and I'm proud to understand that too.
4. It's time to end poverty once and for all on this planet Earth with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that. Let's share money and food with all people in the struggle worldwide and I'm proud to understand that too.
5. It's time to end starvation and famine once and for all on this planet Earth with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that. Let's share money and food with all people in the struggle worldwide and I'm proud to understand that too.

6. It's time to end all social issues once and for all on this planet Earth with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.
7. If you're tired of being poor and starving in this world then it's time to stand up and let the world know your tired of all these problems out here and being poor and starving on this planet Earth! March the streets peacefully and scream "Thug Life! Thug Life! Thug Life!" while blasting 2Pac's music since 2Pac made Thug Life for all underdogs and underrepresented people on this planet and you'll see me write more about that in the twelfth proud statement below. Let's use 2Pac's "Changes" song because it's time to make a difference out here in this world because people are tired of being oppressed and tired of being poor and starving out here in this hard world. So peacefully protest and march the streets blasting Pac's music and screaming Thug Life if you're a poor, starving, and a underrepresented person on this planet Earth and I'm proud to say that and empower all oppressed people, homeless people, the underrepresented, underdogs, and poor people worldwide and I'm proud to empower all underdogs and underrepresented people mentioned in the twelfth proud statement.
8. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and always try to leave the violence to our fiction and music if you can since promoting peace in this world is a huge reason why 2Pac made his "Changes" song in the first place. 2Pac died for social change and peace so let's respect his death for social change and peace and listen to his "Changes" song and try to promote peace in the world like Pac says in his "Changes" song and I'm proud to recommend that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
9. We have to save all the poor people, black people, homeless people, niggas, gangsters, thugs, the have nots, minorities, people currently in poverty, the starving children and homeless children, the starving and homeless people worldwide of all races and ethnicities, and all people struggling worldwide on this planet while striving for peace all with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. It's time to listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and try to end all fighting, end wars, try to end conflicts, stop the violence, put down the guns, weapons, and end the violence while instead trying to leave all forms of violence to our fiction and music if we can worldwide. Let's leave the violence to our fiction and music and not partake in violence in real life if possible so we can end all this pain and suffering worldwide and finally live in peace with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. The entire human race should start donating and sharing money with the poor people in the struggle worldwide and I'm proud to understand that. We need to save all poor people and homeless people worldwide of all races and we can only do that if we all pitch in and do our part and start consistently donating, sharing our money, and giving a portion of our money away to those that are in need and to those who have less out there in this world consumed by poverty, hunger, and famine. Let's work together as a human race on this planet to end poverty worldwide with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.
10. I respect all nations and countries laws on this planet and any country and nation on this planet Earth with anti-gay laws, anti-atheist and agnostic laws, that do not favor the

LGBTQ, and have specific laws concerning women in their respective country and nation along other people and categories on this planet Earth, those countries and nations can choose to ignore or acknowledge the following proud statements written below that concern and relate to the LGBTQ, atheist, agnostics, and women in their respective country or nation on this planet Earth.

11. It's time to end world hunger, homelessness, and starvation on this planet Earth once for all and I'm proud to understand that. Let's feed every human being on this planet Earth, especially the ones that are poor, homeless, and struggling and let's give them money and homes to sleep in on this planet Earth and I'm proud to understand that. Let's use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help end homelessness, poverty, and starvation worldwide while working for world peace and I'm proud to say that too.

12. Tupac Shakur defined his Thug Life tattoo as an acronym that meant The Hate U Gave Little Infants Fucks Everybody, T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E. defined by Tupac Shakur himself, which he created for all underdogs and underrepresented people on the planet Earth. Tupac Shakur made his Thug Life acronym to not only empower black people, thugs, gangsters, niggas, and poor and homeless people but also to empower all underdogs and underrepresented people in this world as well and to show society that the hate and oppression toward underrepresented people screws everyone in society as a whole in this world. I'm here to also show the world that this acronym applies to all oppressed people and underrepresented people on this planet Earth and showcase that it applies to people in categories that society worldwide wouldn't normally expect initially because all the categories I'm about to mention are underrepresented people that have been oppressed and have received hate by society worldwide which further validates Tupac Shakur's The Hate U Gave Little Infants Fucks Everybody, T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E. acronym on this planet Earth because all of these categories I'm about to mention have a place on this planet Earth and giving hate to them screws all of society worldwide on this planet Earth and that's what 2Pac's The Hate U Gave Little Infants Fucks Everybody, T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E. is all about. Tupac Shakur stated his Thug Life acronym is for the empowerment of all underdogs and underrepresented people in this world and these oppressed and underrepresented people comprise: black people, poor people, thugs, gangsters, niggas, homeless people, black women, women, LGBTQ people, impoverished people, introverts, black introverts, fans of adult animation and teen animation, gamers, manga and anime fans, comic book fans, nerds and geeks, cartoon fans, oppressed people, handicapped people, struggling people, atheist, agnostics, starving people, non-emotional females and emotional males, old people, the mentally ill, underrepresented people, minorities, and all other underrepresented people in this world. So basically 2Pac says Thug Life means Underdog Life and you can confirm this yourself by looking up Thug Life explained online on the internet, you'll find it from a scene of his *Tupac: Resurrection* documentary when he mentions the person who overcomes and succeeds is a thug because he overcame all obstacles, the dictionary, and the person who has nothing still has his head up high and is being strong through all the adversity and hardships of life. That pretty much paraphrases the exact scene right there for you word for word that Tupac said about Thug Life for you to easily look up online, Tupac, the Outlawz, and Thug Life members, and speakers in documentaries have all talked about

T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E. and its acronym and definition in multiple documentaries on Tupac and interviews as well online for people to access and research and I'm adding my understanding of T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E. as well since I researched it and understood myself its meaning for this planet Earth with me showing its meaning here now in this story. With the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song all this hate needs to stop if we all want to live in peace on this planet, we need to respect oppressed and underrepresented people listed above with 2Pac's "Changes" song because all these problems won't go away on this planet if we don't as human beings on this planet Earth. 2Pac's "Changes" song can help humanity as a whole in this world because each of these categories has a place in this world and deserve support, respect, and help. All the categories mentioned above represent a different underdog and underrepresented person that has received hate that in turn screws society as a whole with Tupac Shakur's Thug Life acronym understanding, 2Pac's "Changes" can help humanity end all this hatred by simply heeding to its message before it's too late and we go extinct on this planet Earth without making it to or close to world peace in some fashion in this world. Therefore, if humanity wishes to live in peace and end all these problems and social issues then we should work with 2Pac's "Changes" song as a human race and work toward world peace the best we can and use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help try to respect our differences on this planet. I also briefly wanted to mention that 2Pac wrote the songs "Shorty Wanna Be a Thug" and "Young Niggaz" for kids, children, and teenagers so that they won't do things like drop out of school and all that, so for all the parents out there reading this I ask that you please relax and not come at me with criticism for allegedly causing your child to drop out of school through the content of my story. 2Pac wrote "Shorty Wanna Be a Thug" and "Young Niggaz" so that kids would stay in school, get jobs, and raise a family like everybody, so because 2Pac wrote "Shorty Wanna Be a Thug" and "Young Niggaz" I felt I should carry on his message in those songs and I'm sure 2Pac, the Outlawz, and the Thug Life group would want me to do that too. I'm not an actual thug like 2Pac was but regardless of me not being an actual thug like Pac was I still connect to Thug Life because I'm black and I'm an underdog and underrepresented person in society just like a lot of people are of all nationalities, cultures, races, genders, and social groups are in this world. Thug Life connects to people of all cultures, races, genders, and ethnicities because it represents all people in the struggle and all people that received hate from the richer, wealthier, and the overrepresented in society that constantly oppresses the poor and underrepresented. But as we all know now The Hate U Gave Little Infants Fucks Everybody which is what 2Pac said Thug Life meant and embodies since all that hatred against the underrepresented screws all of society and eventually the people will peacefully revolt and fight for their rights, freedom, wealth, and liberation. So I love Thug Life and Tupac Shakur for those reasons and so many more even if I'm not an actual thug in my life, I'll always connect to Thug Life and identify with it and all underdogs and underrepresented people should too so they can be proud of who they are and happy to live this life as an underdog and underrepresented person in this world and I'm proud to say all that. Everybody on the planet Earth needs to take a minute and give their respect and condolences to Tupac Amaru Shakur and everything that he did for this planet along with his amazing crew the Outlawz, and the Thug Life group. They put their lives on the line to change the world and they put passion, emotion, and hard work into everything that they did for this world and all I'm saying here now is each and every one of them needs and deserves

recognition, respect, and gratitude for everything that they did for this planet Earth. Tupac especially put a lot of effort and hard work into everything that he did for social change and so I felt it'd disrespectful to not give that respect and condolences to him for all that he did for this world, so I ask please for every human being on the planet Earth to acknowledge and respect Tupac Shakur and everything that he did for this world along with the Outlawz and the Thug Life group as well and I'm proud to say all that from the bottom of my heart. Rest in peace Tupac and all the other Outlawz and Thug Life members that may have passed away while I'm writing this today and in future time periods and thank you so much for everything that you guys did for this world.

13. Always remember Thug Life basically means Underdog Life along with the Thug Life acronym meaning The Hate U Gave Little Infants Fucks Everybody, T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E because all hate given to the underrepresented screws all of society in this world. And always remember T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E. applies to people of these categories on this planet Earth: black people, poor people, thugs, gangsters, niggas, homeless people, black women, women, LGBTQ people, impoverished people, introverts, black introverts, fans of adult animation and teen animation, gamers, manga and anime fans, comic book fans, nerds and geeks, cartoon fans, oppressed people, starving people, non-emotional females and emotional males, struggling people, atheist, agnostics, handicapped people, old people, the mentally ill, underrepresented people, minorities, and all other underrepresented people in this world and I'm proud to understand that.
14. If you're tired of being poor and starving out here in this world and of these problems against underdogs and underrepresented people in this world then stand up and march the streets peacefully and revolt in this world! March the streets peacefully and scream "Thug Life! Thug Life! Thug Life! Thug Life!" at the top of your lungs if you're an underrepresented person that's received hate and oppression in this world and if you're tired of being poor, homeless, and starving in this world! Tupac Shakur said you're a thug if you're an underdog and underrepresented person in society on this planet Earth which means 2Pac said Thug Life means Underdog Life which he made for all underrepresented and oppressed people in this world. If you're one of these underdogs and underrepresented people: black people, poor people, thugs, gangsters, niggas, homeless people, black women, women, LGBTQ people, impoverished people, introverts, black introverts, fans of adult animation and teen animation, gamers, manga and anime fans, comic book fans, nerds and geeks, cartoon fans, oppressed people, starving people, non-emotional females and emotional males, struggling people, atheists, agnostics, handicapped people, old people, the mentally ill, underrepresented people, minorities, along with other underrepresented people in this world, and if you're tired of being poor and starving in this world then stand up and protest peacefully and march the streets peacefully worldwide screaming "Thug Life! Thug Life!" while blasting 2Pac's music to end all this oppression and poverty in this world for all people on this planet Earth and I'm proud to say that and empower all oppressed and poor people in this world!
15. Like with the message for peace in 2Pac's "Changes" song, all forms of protest should be peaceful and non-violent in this world and I'm proud to say that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.

16. It's time for us to help poor people of all races struggling worldwide on this planet Earth. Let's help all poor people and love and support each other as a community worldwide and always share money continuously so people can get out of poverty and starvation worldwide and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. Donate and share money with the person next to you whether they're rich or poor, share money always with those in need, and continue to do this on a constant basis so we can end this poverty, starvation, and homelessness issue together as a human race on this planet with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to support that and recommend this sharing money mentality and idea with all people and poor and homeless people of all races on this planet Earth with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
17. I'm tired of seeing no results of social change in this world and just seeing movies, hearing music, watching music videos, reading books, and watching speeches about the struggles of being poor and starving on this planet with all these problems still here! It's time to see some results on this planet! If your poor and starving on this planet Earth and fed up and tired of it, Use 2Pac's songs like "Changes" and get up and march the streets peacefully and let the world know your tired of starving and being in poverty out here! Scream "Thug Life! Thug Life Thug Life! Thug Life!" if you're tired of being poor and starving out here and if you're an underdog and underrepresented person in this world because people are tired of being poor and struggling out here in this world! 2Pac was right, its real dirty out here and somebody's gotta help all these poor and homeless people and underrepresented people so let's clean up this mess like 2Pac said and get all these poor and homeless people worldwide some money, housing, and food with the help of 2Pac's music and "Changes" song. I can't relax and watch movies, play video games, read manga, and hang with my friends and all that until all these homeless people and poor people get some help out here, I wanna enjoy my life on this planet just like everybody else but I can't do that until these problems go away and all these poor and homeless people get some food in their stomachs and some money in their pockets out here. So peacefully march the streets if your poor and starving and tired of struggling and being homeless out here and use 2Pac's "Changes" song and music to help you and I'm proud to understand that and empower poor and homeless people worldwide.
18. If you ever wanted to know why people act and behave different in this world, it's because of something called the Myers-Briggs Type Indicator. People of all cultures, races, genders, and ethnicities have either one of the sixteen personality types based on the Myers-Briggs apart of them and I'll mention the sixteen personality types in the next sentence. ESTJ, ESTP, ISTJ, ISTP, ESFJ, ESFP, ISFJ, ISFP, ENFJ, ENFP, INFJ, INFP, ENTJ, ENTP, INTJ, and INTP are the sixteen personality types you can be, there are eight extroverted personalities and eight introverted personalities that are listed above a part of the Myers-Briggs Type Indicator, you can't change your personality type because of multiple factors like functions being used by each personality type and all that. It's the most popular and accurate personality assessment in the world and it helps explain why people are different in this world. So now you know, now you know why people of all cultures, races, genders, and ethnicities act and behave differently. You the reader can research it and analyze it on your own time, I'm just writing it here to raise awareness on

it so people and families can know why they act and behave differently in this world. Both extroverts and introverts live with each other in this world so understanding the Myers-Briggs and using 2Pac's song "Changes" will help all of humanity better understand each other in this world. Each of the extroverts and introverts in this world based on the Myers-Briggs use different functions primarily, secondary, and so on but you'll learn more about that if you better research the Myers-Briggs and Myers-Briggs functions online so you'll know what I'm talking about here. I'm just here to better explain and raise awareness on all this, once you start reading and researching yourself the Myers Briggs stuff if you're interested then everything will become clear to you the reader reading this now. Just search online "Myers Briggs" and "MBTI functions" and everything will become clear on what I'm talking about and you'll better understand why people around you act and behave differently and better understand yourself as well which is a positive as well for all people in this world. You can take the personality assessment but whether you do or not you can read the descriptions online and confirm your personality type. A lot of people also mistype themselves when they answer certain questions wrong and all that so reading the descriptions of each type online or wherever until you find the one that fits you the best is usually best method whether you take the assessment or not. Anyways that's all, now you know why people act different in this world, there are sixteen personality types in this world, with eight of them being extroverts and the other eight being introverts and I'm proud to understand that finally on this planet Earth.

19. Always support and help people in the struggle that are poor, starving, and struggling worldwide anyway you can with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that and support sharing money with poor, starving, and struggling people worldwide. Let's help the community as human beings worldwide and help all these poor people, have-nots, and starving people out here. We can only do this if all humans listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and help people that are poor and in the struggle worldwide, so let's do this and help change the world and help poor people, starving people, people in the struggle, and homeless people worldwide with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud support all that and support helping people that are poor, starving, and in the struggle worldwide.
20. Always share money with the poor and homeless consistently with the help 2Pac's "Changes" song in all time periods and I'm proud to understand that.
21. Always share food with the poor and homeless consistently with the help 2Pac's "Changes" song in all time periods and I'm proud to understand that.
22. Always try to share money with anybody poor or not if you can in this world and I'm proud to understand that.
23. When you see a homeless person on the street or with a sign, stop and give them some money if you can and do this consistently to each homeless and poor person you meet in your life.

24. I'm Christian and I'm proud.
25. I'm Muslim and I'm proud.
26. I'm Jewish and I'm proud.
27. I'm Buddhist and I'm proud.
28. I'm Hindu and I'm proud.
29. I'm Taoist and I'm proud.
30. I respect all nations and countries on this planet and their laws concerning atheism and agnosticism, if it is disfavored or illegal to be atheist or agnostic in your respective country or nation on this planet then those countries and nations have the choice to either ignore or acknowledge the following statements and sentences written after this sentence. With that being said and while respecting those nations and countries on this planet Earth, I will write the following statement and sentence primarily for nations and countries with atheist where it is legal to be agnostic and atheist and those countries and nations where it is not legal to be atheist or agnostic can disregard the following statement and sentence if they so choose. I'm atheist and I'm proud.
31. I respect all nations and countries on this planet and their laws concerning atheism and agnosticism, if it is disfavored or illegal to be atheist or agnostic in your respective country or nation on this planet then those countries and nations have the choice to either ignore or acknowledge the following statements and sentences written after this sentence. With that being said and while respecting those nations and countries on this planet Earth, I will write the following statement and sentence primarily for nations and countries with agnostics where it is legal to be agnostic and atheist and those countries and nations where it is not legal to be atheist or agnostic can disregard the following statement and sentence if they so choose. I'm agnostic and I'm proud.
32. I respect all nations and countries on this planet and their laws concerning atheism and agnosticism, if it is disfavored or illegal to be atheist or agnostic in your respective country or nation on this planet then those countries and nations have the choice to either ignore or acknowledge the following statements and sentences written after this sentence. With that being said and while respecting those nations and countries on this planet Earth, I will write the following statement and sentence primarily for nations and countries with agnostics where it is legal to be agnostic and atheist and those countries and nations where it is not legal to be atheist or agnostic can disregard the following statement and sentence if they so choose. I'm non-religious and I'm proud.
33. I respect all nations and countries on this planet and their laws concerning atheism and agnosticism, if it is disfavored or illegal to be atheist or agnostic in your respective country or nation on this planet then those countries and nations have the choice to either ignore or acknowledge the following statements and sentences written after this sentence.

With that being said and while respecting those nations and countries on this planet Earth, I will write the following statement and sentence primarily for nations and countries with agnostics where it is legal to be agnostic and atheist and those countries and nations where it is not legal to be atheist or agnostic can disregard the following statement and sentence if they so choose. If religious people, atheists, agnostics, and non-religious people are going to live together on this planet Earth then we as humans need to listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song to help love and respect each other regardless of each other's personal religious beliefs on this planet and I'm proud to believe that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.

34. I'm religious/spiritual and I'm proud.

35. It's time for education to change for the better worldwide and I'm proud to believe that. We need to put more learning in the classroom and less force fed information and test score obsession in all schools, colleges, and universities worldwide and I'm proud to understand that. Things like grades and test scores are very important but we need to put more learning in the classroom with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and also recognize that everybody's human out there because a lot teenagers and adults that are students feel tons of pressure to be perfect academically and of course overachieving and trying to do your best should be encouraged but we shouldn't dehumanize ourselves and emotions when we can't handle the stress of education when it comes to our children's health and emotions along with teenagers and adults that are still in education as well. We need to listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and lower down the pressure of education while still encouraging students of all ages to achieve good grades and great test scores at the same time. We should do that and also put more learning in the classroom with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song so education can be more healthy and wholesome and balanced again for everybody that are currently students of all ages in education and for the future students to come in this world we live in. Education is a big part of humanity and everybody should always be as smart and intelligent as they can be in this world like 2Pac said in his song "White Man's World" that he created for black people primarily but other races and people can heed to its message too on this planet. Let's listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and fix education and make education and schools more affordable as well worldwide in all schools, colleges, and universities on the planet Earth and let's also analyze the landscape of education entirely since things like Khan Academy made by Salman Khan and Crash Course made by John Green and Hank Green exist today, we must analyze and understand where education is going and decide how we intend to teach students worldwide when it comes the new digital age that's permanent that we are living in today as human beings on this planet Earth and I'm proud to understand all that too. Also I respect all nations and governments on this planet and their laws, countries and nations with specific government systems based in their respective country and nation and laws that are based in their country and nation can choose to read or acknowledge the following statement and sentence at their own will, if any country or nation chooses not to read or acknowledge the following sentence then that is entirely up to them. With that being said, I believe it is important to treasure and remember the themes and messages in historically important books and novels like *Fahrenheit 451* by Ray Bradbury, *1984* by George Orwell, *To Kill a Mockingbird* by Harper Lee, *The Catcher in the Rye* by J.D.

Salinger and many more important books such as these made in this world for humanity to analyze, treasure, and apply the messages to our daily lives on this planet Earth. I believe we should heed to their messages for the bettering of humanity as a whole on this planet. Books like those mentioned and many more similar to them help us as a human race learn from our mistakes or warn us from any negative possibilities for the human race to come on this planet Earth, let's heed to their messages with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and make the world a more positive place for everyone while learning from our mistakes and preventing any more mistakes to come as a collective human race on this planet and I'm proud to understand that and support the meaning in important novels like those mentioned above created for the benefit of humanity.

36. Always respect black women and women on this planet because you can be very attracted to women in this world and still treat black women and women with respect and I'm proud to understand that. All you black women and women out there in the world, you are appreciated for your hard work and struggles in society in this world and I'm proud to say that. Listen to 2Pac's "Dear Mama," "Keep Ya Head Up," and "Brenda's Got a Baby," when things are tough and when you're going through hardship in your life. If you always have hope and embrace and keep inspiration in your life, I can almost guarantee things will get better for you and your loved ones. Never give up out there for all the black women and women in the struggle worldwide and I'm proud to understand that and empower and support black women and women in this world. I respect all countries and nations and their laws concerning women in their respective country and nation on this planet Earth.
37. If you're poor and struggling out there on this planet Earth, I feel you and understand your pain and hardships. Never give up hope out there. Always embrace inspiration in your life and never give up no matter what. No matter how much the world tries to dog you down and oppress you never give up hope out there in this cruel world. If you need inspiration then listen to 2Pac songs like "Until the End of Time," "Life Goes On," and "Hold On, Be Strong" to get you through the day and all the hardship. Never let the world get you down and don't care what other people think of you in your life. I pray for all the people and families in the struggle out there worldwide and hope the best for all of you in this hard life. Embrace inspiration in your life and always believe in yourself and I can almost guarantee you that all the pain and suffering will feel like nothing and you'll feel like you can do anything in this world and nothing can stop you. Inspiration can change any person's life if they simply embrace it in their life and share that inspiration with others to make the world an even better place than before. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and embrace inspiration in your life while trying to inspire others as well, if everybody does that then I can almost guarantee that life will get better for everybody on this planet Earth and all this pain and suffering everywhere will start diminishing and going away. Never give up out there, always embrace inspiration in your life, and listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and live a better more positive life so that you can finally say you have no regrets living this hard life on this planet Earth and finally feel good about being alive on this planet instead. I'm proud to understand all that and inspire all people worldwide that's struggling on this planet Earth.

38. It's time for racism to end once and for all on this planet Earth with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.
39. It's time for sexism to end once and for all on this planet Earth with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.
40. I respect all nations and countries and their laws based in their respective country and nation on this planet. I believe in equality for all but I will respect countries and nations on this planet with laws where it is illegal to be an LGBTQ person in their country and nation, I will only hope 2Pac's "Changes" song will eventually help equality for everyone on this planet as time progresses in human history on this planet Earth. With that being said I will write the following sentence while respecting all nations and countries and their laws concerning LGBTQ people in their country and nation on this planet, I will write the following sentence mainly for countries and nations with LGBTQ people that have it legal to be LGBTQ in their respective country and nation. Those countries and nations that have anti-gay laws or countries and nations that do not favor LGBTQ people do not need to read or acknowledge the following sentence if they so choose to do so, it is entirely up to each particular country and nation on this planet to decide how to handle their laws and ways of life concerning their LGBTQ people in their particular country and nation, I respect every country and nation on this planet Earth and their laws on this planet despite my personal views for equality for all. With that being said I will write following statement and sentence while respecting those countries and nations. It's time for homophobia to end once and for all on this planet Earth with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.
41. It's time for oppression against the poor and disenfranchised in this world to end once and for all on this planet Earth with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that. Also use 2Pac's "Changes" to end things like racism against blacks, racism and prejudging against ethnoreligious groups and so on in the world. People like blacks, Jews, Muslims, Asians, Latinos, and so on with all races, ethnicities, and cultures on this planet Earth should be respected and treated equally without prejudging and racism based on stereotypes, skin color, and past events and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
42. I'm black and I'm proud.
43. I'm a black woman and I'm proud.
44. I'm a woman and I'm proud.
45. I respect all nations and countries and their laws based in their respective country and nation on this planet. I believe in equality for all but I will respect countries and nations on this planet with laws where it is illegal to be an LGBTQ person in their country and nation, I will only hope 2Pac's "Changes" song will eventually help equality for everyone on this planet as time progresses in human history on this planet Earth. With that being said I will write the following sentence while respecting all nations and countries and

their laws concerning LGBTQ people in their country and nation on this planet, I will write the following sentence mainly for countries and nations with LGBTQ people that have it legal to be LGBTQ in their respective country and nation. Those countries and nations that have anti-gay laws or countries and nations that do not favor LGBTQ people do not need to read or acknowledge the following sentence if they so choose to do so, it is entirely up to each particular country and nation on this planet to decide how to handle their laws and ways of life concerning their LGBTQ people in their particular country and nation, I respect every country and nation on this planet Earth and their laws on this planet despite my personal views for equality for all. With that being said I will write following statement and sentence while respecting those countries and nations. I'm LGBTQ person or I'm black and I'm an LGBTQ person and I'm proud.

46. It's time to provide more resources, food, water, education, and other opportunities to countries and nations on this planet Earth that don't have as much as those things or any of those things mentioned at all with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.
47. Let's use 2Pac's "Changes" and provide clean and fresh water to impoverished countries and nations on this planet Earth. Let's provide water and more food money to these nations along with other poor and homeless people in the struggle worldwide and I'm proud to understand that.
48. Let's use 2Pac's "Changes" and provide internet access and more technology and technological advancement and opportunities to nations and countries that don't have easy access to internet and technology on this planet Earth and I'm proud to understand that.
49. If you're ever struggling, depressed, and stressed out there in life, embrace inspiration in your life and use 2Pac's music to help cope with the stress, depression, and pain and move forward in this hard life we all live and I'm proud to understand that and inspire people in this world.
50. When you draw based on the natural world you get an animated show or comic that's made for adults and teenagers since the natural world is realistic, hard, filled with drugs, sex, money, greed, blood, controlled violence and all that. Let's listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and be open to animation made for adults, children, and teenagers in this world and I'm proud to understand that. Let's also respect people's interests and leave people alone to what they like even if they like children's animation and content as well. Animation and comics are made for all types of people and ages and lots of adults and teenagers like things like *Charlie Brown*, *Calvin and Hobbes*, *Dragon Ball Z*, *One Piece*, *Naruto*, Disney and Pixar animation, *Pokémon*, and other animated properties in this world and I'm proud to understand that. So let's be open to animation, anime, comics, and manga for all ages and age groups on this planet for teenagers, children, and adults alike on this planet because all forms of animation and comics have a place in this world and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.

51. Anime and manga should always be good quality and creative in this world like manga and anime like *Dragon Ball*, *One Piece*, and so on and 2Pac's "Changes" song can help anime creators and manga artists keep making good quality manga and anime. Let's use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help make anime and manga characters act like real people like with the characters in *Dragon Ball Z*, *One Piece*, *Naruto*, *Yu Yu Hakusho*, *Monster*, *20th Century Boys*, *Fullmetal Alchemist*, *Slam Dunk*, *Vagabond*, Studio Ghibli movies and so on and I'm proud to understand that.
52. EXTRA: I just wanted to say here that I am in no way a political expert like most people on this planet are. I generally love learning new things and try to learn as much as I can about the world and stay up to date on politics the best I can and I encourage others to do the same and learn as much they can about politics as they can for both teenagers and adults in this world. But I mostly like to talk about philosophy, morality, ideas, concepts, and things of that nature, politics isn't my strong suit like Tupac Shakur was since he was a very politically intelligent person as we all know. I'm writing this story here today because I still see people struggling, homeless, and starving and all that everywhere. And I see people not fully listening to 2Pac's "Changes" with all these moral problems still here like racism, sexism, and all that so I felt I had to step in and clean it up like 2Pac said in his interview. That's all I'm doing, I don't generally like speeches and all that since I'm an introvert but I'll do them if I must and if I have too if the people want it. I feel like publishing this book alone is enough to keep humanity moral and me saying speeches and all that ain't necessary really but hey that's just me and just what I think, like I said I'll do the speech thing if I must. I generally just want to talk about things I know about since I hate talking topics I don't have a fair amount of knowledge of to confidently talk about, things like morality, philosophy, spirituality and all that are things I'd feel comfortable discussing generally. Politicians and political intelligent people can speak about the politics stuff more so I believe; I'm just here to fill in that gap of morality since all these problems are still here and do what I know I'm good at doing and speak on what I know about as well. Things like speaking about morality, concepts, the big picture, and inspiring people is what I believe my purpose on this planet was meant for. So I'm just here fulfilling my prophecy on this planet Earth, and it's all thanks to 2Pac and his crew for putting in work beforehand in the 90s, so thank you Tupac Shakur, the Outlawz, and Thug Life group for that. All right, that's all I had to say about that, you can continue on reading the next set of lists. I just needed to put this in there as a disclaimer of sorts so people won't expect me to be the most politically smart person out there, and expect me to speak on subjects I may not be as knowledgeable about as well. My brain works in a certain direction like the scientist Richard Feynman once said about himself of having a limited intelligence that focuses in a particular direction. I sometimes have a bad memory, and may forget or not know some famous people's names, some celebrity names, or certain historical events besides the obvious ones everyone knows generally of course. So please forgive me if I don't know about a particular historical event, famous person, celebrity's name, or your name or face if I meet you in person even one day. Most famous people, historical events, and celebrities that everyone knows and are easy to remember of course I'd generally know too, but I was just letting ya'll know how my brain works, my mind latches onto things its generally interested in at the time or onto my most common interests and preferences like most people. I'm still learning about the

world and its cultures, different religions, and more general things about the world everyday like other people, so life is a continuous learning experience for me. That's how I see life and I recommend all people to always strive to learn new things everyday as well in their life since life's so short on this planet to begin with, you know? Anyways I just wanted to let everyone know that I'm a normal person just like everybody else out there and I wanna live my life on this Earth normally just like everybody else too on this planet. That's all I had to say about that, keep on reading on and always stay strong out there and stay true to yourself and always embrace inspiration in your life in this hard life we all live on this planet, 2Pac's "Changes" for life and I'm proud to say that.

53. Let's respect the efforts of historical leaders' hard work on this planet like Martin Luther King Jr., Mahatma Gandhi, the many great popes over the course of history like the current pope in my time period of me writing which is Pope Francis, Mother Teresa, Nelson Mandela, Malcolm X, Tupac Shakur and all the other great historical leaders in this world and listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and make an actual difference to clean up all these social issues on this planet once and for all and I'm proud to understand that.
54. I don't take much interest in politics or for political discussions too much and feel politically smart people and politicians would generally be better with discussing politics than me. With my *Spirit Story* novel I feel I'm here to draw the line between politics and morality since they're both different and I feel I'm here to fix morality issues on this planet Earth and that is it, so please do not expect me to discuss politics as much compared to subjects such as concepts, morality, spirituality, philosophy, ideas, and so on. I don't generally like talking about political topics and subjects I may know nothing about so in those cases I won't discuss any political issues if I am in no way knowledgeable about the subjects in way or fashion. I still love learning about politics and love learning about new things in the world and its issues but all I'm saying here not is I'm no political expert so don't expect me to be one when you meet me or see me in the world. Tupac Shakur was much more politically intelligent than I was but in my case it takes work and effort to learn all the complexities on politics just like everyone else in this world, I also recommend regular people in the world to continue to learn about politics and the world and stay as politically intelligent as you can be and along with all the other great and interesting things on this planet Earth as well and always stay socially aware on the world's problems and issues as well and I'm proud to say that for all the people on this planet Earth and give my disclaimer on my own political inadequacies, message from Shane McDowell the author himself.
55. EXTRA for my family and friends: I'm sorry Mom, my family, and my friends that I had to leave like I had too when *Spirit Story* launched and released. I had no choice since I had to write this and carry on 2Pac's "Me Against the World" and "Changes" songs and spirit to clean up all these problems in this world. 2Pac was right, it's real dirty out here in this world and somebody's had to stand up and clean up this world once and for all with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. If I don't do this then humanity will go to ruin and kill each other until we go extinct as a human race on this planet, so I got to do what I got to do for this planet Earth before it's too late. I promise Mom I'll send you and the family money I make from *Spirit Story* so you can all stop being poor and starving, that's

the most I can do for you all for now. And for all my friends out there from high school I promise I'll do the same for you, I won't be able to see you guys for a while until I clean this world up but if I survive through all this craziness to come and make it to the end then I can't wait to see y'all again and hang out just like the good ol' days. I love y'all from the bottom of my heart; hope to see you all again as soon as I can. Much love, written by Shane McDowell. "Changes" and "Me Against the World," by 2Pac for life, I don't have anything to lose man just like he said back then so let's do this finally. Modern humans have been on this planet for 200,000 years and now we can finally get a chance to fix all these problems once and for all thanks to 2Pac's "Changes" song. If you want to know more about me the author, then I will say my name is Shane McDowell and I am the spark that Tupac Shakur was talking about all those years ago. I am born and am a resident of the country the United States of America and I'm an African American straight male. Since I value both religion and science equally I am a spiritual agnostic person in terms of my personal religious beliefs and I value and respect all religions on this planet and I ask that anyone reading this to please respect my beliefs as well as I will respect yours and everyone else's on this planet Earth. I might as well be a Christian as well since my family is mostly Christian and it's the biggest religion in my country America as well but my personal beliefs fall in between so I identify myself as a spiritual agnostic in my life. And my spiritual beliefs have definitely evolved greatly since I was a kid since back then I didn't think too much about it or what to believe back then, so I'm glad now that I'm older since my spiritual beliefs are more set in stone and I feel more comfortable with my personal views and beliefs nowadays. I have much respect for Jesus Christ and I appreciate him very much, a person like Jesus Christ who is known for dying for humanity's sins to save humanity as a whole should be remembered in all of time. I also respect and appreciate the other major religious people and figures in all the countless religions out there in this world, I plan on learning as much as I can about each religion at my own pace and reading their religious texts and researching as much as I can over the course of my life during my own personal journey for embracing spirituality in my life in this world. I also think everyone should keep their faith and not let mine as a spiritual agnostic stray you from your own personal beliefs, since I can't confirm what's true or not spiritually in this world I prefer to stay in the middle and learn at my own pace on each religion, spirituality, and the possibilities of this universe we live, but don't let my beliefs affect yours, keep your faith wherever it falls out there. I am still learning about the world like I mentioned above and I am learning about the different world's religions at my own pace as I go along in my life. I would also like to give my thanks again to Tupac Shakur. Thank you 2Pac, if it wasn't for you, the Outlawz, and the Thug Life group for everything that y'all did for this planet, who knows what would happen to the human race. It's all thanks to y'all, so I appreciate everything that you guys did for this world and all the people living on this planet and to live on it in the future to come. Rest in peace Tupac Shakur and any fallen Outlawz and Thug Life members that may have passed away in any time period on this planet Earth, all your hard work and struggles for this world won't go in vain. All the music that y'all made, y'all lifestyles and hard work, and 2Pac's "Changes" won't be forgotten in all of human history on this planet Earth and I'm proud to understand that and appreciate 2Pac and his crew and everything that they did for this world and planet Earth.

56. I also wanted to touch on the topic of the race and skin color of my main character Sean. Regardless of me not intentionally choosing the skin color of my main character Sean, I take full responsibility for the skin color of my main character Sean for being non-black/white. That was how Sean's skin color came to me automatically in my mind after getting sparked from Tupac Shakur's music and getting influenced and drawing ideas for *Spirit Story* from mangas like *Dragon Ball* and *Yu Yu Hakusho*. I take full responsibility for it regardless and will understand completely if any black people or the black community disapproves and dislikes Sean's skin color being non-black/white, along with other people of other races as well that have an issue with it. To accommodate this racial controversy with my main character there's plenty of black people of many different personalities both extrovert and introvert in the story and novel series that's in my head that will throughout the novel and book series, so I hope that can appease any people that have a problem with Sean's race and skin color in particular with what this story represents and is all about overall. Sean's skin color came to me this way unconsciously when the franchise came in my head and when I tried to change him to be black in my mind it felt like it wasn't working for him and didn't fit his character as compared to black characters that you've seen so far like Darion and Mr. Francis, and I don't like to force things when it seems it was meant to be a certain way for a story or when it comes to storytelling, so that's why I chose to not force it and to simply leave him based on how his character came in my mind while still having Sean value black values, liking black music, and black culture and things like that. Regardless of all that and with all that being said, black people and other people can critique me and are viable to their opinions if they disfavor and disapprove of Sean's skin color/race and have problems with or have mixed feelings toward his skin color and race. Despite Sean's skin color and race being non-black/white, I fully believe that all black people should be proud to be black always and heed to the message in 2Pac's "White Man's World" song. People may analyze and see this as being, using a non-black/white character to protest against racism and supporting blacks with a non-black/white main character I presume, I thought about that afterwards but like I said that wasn't a conscious decision initially since the character just came to me that way when the story was sparked in my mind but I felt I should mention this concept any way to the world regardless of all that. Anyways I felt this subject was important thus me writing it here now for people to read and criticize.
57. Even though I'm not an actual thug like 2Pac was I still love Pac and connect to Pac's music and Thug Life acronym as a black male and underdog in society. The Hate U Gave Little Infants Fucks Everybody, really anybody that's underrepresented in some way can connect and relate to that since there's so many underdogs and underrepresented people in society of all races, genders, ethnicities, and cultures worldwide. So even if I've never been an actual thug in my life like 2Pac was I still connect to Thug Life for that because I'm an underdog and always will be and I'm proud to be one always and always will be proud to be an underdog for life. Thug life for life, Rest in peace Tupac Shakur, you'll always be remembered by me and all people on this planet Earth in all of time and I'm proud to say and understand that.
58. The photograph of Pac of him smiling with the White Sox hat on is inspiring. I'm proud to be inspired by that photo and by Pac's music and lifestyle and I want to pass that

inspiration to all the people on the planet Earth and I'm proud to do that inspire all people worldwide. Pac said if your good in your heart then your closer to God, so I'm gonna be that way till the day I die 'cause I wanna be like Pac, y'know what I'm saying? And because Pac inspires me in my life and always will. Rest in peace Pac, you'll never be forgotten in all of time.

59. Tupac Shakur read many books during his life and Ray Bradbury, the author of *Fahrenheit 451*, very much loved books as well. Ray Bradbury said the library is very important for our society and to live in the library as in meaning go to the library always in all time periods on this planet Earth, he made *Fahrenheit 451* to warn us to always keep reading books in all time periods even in this permanent digital age we're living in and Tupac Shakur wanted the same thing with the amount of books that he read while he was alive on this planet Earth as well. Ray Bradbury went to the library constantly for ten years and he felt he graduated from the library at age twenty-eight he said. Let's listen to 2Pac's "White Man'z World" and "Changes" song and read books in all time periods so we don't have events like in Ray Bradbury's *Fahrenheit 451* happen in our society and I'm proud to understand that. On a side and amusing note Tupac Shakur and Ray Bradbury both made a song and book called *Something Wicked and Something Wicked This Way Comes* that we're both inspired off a scene from William Shakespeare's *Macbeth*, which is also ironic because they both loved Shakespeare as well but anyways back on topic. Libraries should be here in all of human history on this planet and so should bookstores and the physical book format; we need to listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and make sure that we don't let the digital age eliminate all the things I mentioned just now. Let's heed to the messages that Tupac Shakur and Ray Bradbury have given us and read books and support them and libraries and bookstores in all time periods and I'm proud to understand that and support books and reading in all time periods with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
60. One day I won't be here anymore so when I pass away I have one simple request from humanity, please continue to give money to black people, niggas, the poor and homeless, and other people in the struggle out there in this world. Listen to the lyrics in 2Pac songs like "I Wonder If Heaven Got a Ghetto," "Letter to the President," and "Changes" and always share money, donate, and give a portion of your money and income toward poor people, homeless people, and people in the struggle of all races out there that need it and I'm proud to request that from humanity. I request that and also for people to respect Pac's death and listen his music and "Changes" song so these problems can finally go away for good on this planet Earth and we can finally live in peace on this planet and work toward world peace one step at a time with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to request that and support helping the poor and homeless and support working toward world peace with 2Pac's "Changes" song.
61. Like everybody I'm normal person and citizen like everybody else regardless of the famous life to come from me writing this here now and I just want a peaceful life with my family and friends, so post-*Spirit Story*'s publication that's all I ask for. A normal life with my family and friends away from the media and all that, living in peace and I'm proud to say that.

62. There's a lot of starving and poor black kids in the ghetto and low income communities in this world along with other poor black people in those communities and in the world out there. Are we as people gonna listen to Pac's "Letter to the President" and "Changes" songs and help them finally? It's time to help these people and help all the other people that are poor and starving of all races along with the poor and starving kids and children out there worldwide on this planet and I'm proud to understand that and support saving poor black people and poor people of all races out there, especially the poor black children and poor children out there of all races we need to save. Like 2Pac said there's too much money here, nobody should be hitting lottery for thirty-six million and we got people starving in the streets, there's no way people should own planes and we got people who don't got houses, apartments, shacks, drawers, pants! It's time to listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and "Letter to the President" and give these black people and other people of all races in poverty worldwide that's poor and starving out here some money and food and I'm proud to understand that.
63. Who's tired of being poor and homeless on this planet Earth? Embrace inspiration let's stand up to make a change like in 2Pac's "Changes" song and end all these problems, homelessness, and poverty out here in this world and I'm proud to understand that and empower the poor and homeless worldwide with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. Peacefully march the streets and scream "Thug Life" while blasting 2Pac's music peacefully on the streets if you're an underdog/underrepresented person in this world and you're tired of being poor and starving out there! I'm proud to understand and empower the poor and homeless that's starving out here in this world!
64. Always believe in yourself no matter how hard it gets in this hard world and I'm proud to understand that and inspire the world. 2Pac's "Changes" for life, rest in peace Tupac Shakur.

Proud List

#2

Proud Statements

1. If you're a poor and starving black person, nigga, gangster, thug, homeless person, underrepresented person, and impoverished person in this world and you're tired of being poor and starving in this world then stand up and peacefully revolt! March the streets and let the world know you're tired of being poor and starving out here like 2Pac says in his "Letter to the President" and "Changes" songs! Scream "Thug Life! Thug Life! Thug Life! Thug Life!" with the 2Pac songs I put in a list after you read these proud statements peacefully on the streets of your neighborhood, area, and city and let the world know your tired of being starving and being poor out here! 2Pac made Thug Life and his music to empower all of us underrepresented people in the struggle that are hated on and also poor and starving out here, so let's not let 2Pac's efforts go in vain for this planet and peacefully revolt and march the streets to let the world know we're tired of all these problems and being poor and starving out here. Thug Life will never die as long as people are in the struggle worldwide and underdogs exist in this world! So peacefully

protest worldwide if you're tired of being poor and starving on this planet Earth! I'm proud to say that and empower underrepresented people, poor people, thugs, gangsters, niggas, impoverished people, and starving people worldwide with Thug Life and 2Pac's music!

2. Society needs to share food and money to all the niggas, gangsters, and thugs out here struggling in the world despite society's perception on the crime and violence. Regardless of the crime and all that they need food, money, and help out here just like everybody else, we can use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help promote peace by using Pac's "Changes" song to help leave the violence to our fiction and music which will help promote peace worldwide like Pac stood for in his "Changes" song. We gotta help niggas, gangsters, and thugs despite society's perceptions because they're people too and they're just trying to survive out here in this rough and hard world that we all live in together and society needs to understand that because everybody needs help out here. Pac said he didn't do a crime he didn't have to do in his "Changes" song, if society answered Pac's "Letter to the President" and "Changes" song and gave blacks, niggas, gangsters, thugs, and poor people some money out here then maybe people wouldn't have to do crime to survive in the ghetto and low-income communities worldwide, y'know what I'm saying? Pac said in his 1994 interview that society is leeching off the ghetto and nobody's trying to deal with this section but instead there just moving away from it without doing anything to help these people. Let's start doing something about it now with 2Pac's songs "Letter to the President" and "Changes" and give poor people, niggas, gangsters, thugs, starving people, blacks, and all homeless and poor people struggling in the ghetto and low-income communities worldwide some food and money so they won't have to struggle to survive, starve, and be homeless out here because it's hard enough out here and these people need help and need some money and food already. Let's help niggas, gangsters, and thugs that are currently struggling in poverty, famine, and starvation worldwide along with poor people, black people, homeless people, and other poor and struggling people in this world too. Let's help these people in the struggle worldwide and work toward world peace one step at a time on this planet Earth by listening to 2Pac's "Changes" song and trying to promote peace like Pac says in his "Changes" song by leaving the violence to our fiction and music if we can. If we support leaving the violence to our fiction and music, then the violence can begin to cease with the help of what 2Pac said in his "Changes" song for promoting peace worldwide. But the first step to peace is feeding these people and giving them some money so they can stop struggling and starving out here. I'm proud to say all that and support peace and giving food and money to those struggling in the ghetto and low-income communities worldwide with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
3. 2Pac said you gotta stay smiling through all this suffering, pain, bullshit, and struggling in the amazing song "Smile" by Scarface, so I'm gonna carry on that message and try to inspire all black people and niggas in the struggle out there in this world full of pain and hardship, people of other races in the struggle can also take inspiration from this too because everybody's struggling out here, y'know what I'm saying? For all the niggas, gangster, thugs, and black people that are still in the constant struggle on this planet Earth, stay strong out there and never give up hope. Always believe in yourself no matter what the world thinks of you and never give up hope no matter how hard life gets in this

fucked up world. If you embrace inspiration in your life a whole new world of opportunities and avenues will open up to you in this vast world that you never even knew about or even knew were there. Never give up no matter what because niggas, gangster, thugs, and black people can change the world too and go on to do great things on this planet and I'm proud to understand that, just look at Pac. If you always believe in yourself and embrace inspiration in your life, then almost nothing can stop you in this world. And I'm proud to understand that and inspire niggas, gangsters, thugs, and black people worldwide.

4. If you're poor, starving, and struggling out there in this cruel and hard world and if you lost friends, homies, loved ones, and comrades to the streets or other factors out there or just struggle in general in the ghetto and low income communities in this world then never give up hope, y'know what I'm saying? Embrace inspiration in your life and always believe in yourself and in your loved ones no matter how hard shit gets out there in this cruel world. Listen to 2Pac's "Life Goes On," "So Many Tears," and "Teardrops and Closed Caskets" when loved ones, friends, homies, and family pass away and you reflect and lament on their deaths and when you're struggling in general out there. Embrace inspiration in your life to help you through all the struggle and hardship out there, don't let the world dog you down, use 2Pac's "Changes" to help bring peace to your neighborhood, believe in yourself always and you can do almost anything you choose to in this world and I'm proud to understand that and inspire those in the struggle out there and pray for their loved ones that have passed away.
5. Pac stood for peace in his "Changes" song and he died for that song and social change as well so because of that I felt out of respect him, his efforts, and his death and continue promoting his work for peace in this world so that's what I'm gonna do here now. Let's try to listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and try to leave the violence to our fiction and music if we can in this world with help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to support that. Rest in peace, Tupac Shakur, you will be remembered in all of time for everything that you did for this world.
6. For all the poor people, black people, niggas, gangsters, thugs, homeless people, and impoverished people in the struggle in the world, always believe in yourself no matter the hardship you may face in this rough life. Never give up hope no matter how hard it gets in this hard world. Always believe in yourself and embrace inspiration in your life through all the pain and hardship and use Pac's "Changes" song to try to bring peace to your neighborhoods the best you can by trying to leave the violence to our fiction and music with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song since that's a big part of why Pac made his "Changes" song. Stay strong in this hard life, use Pac's "Changes" to help bring peace in your area, and always embrace inspiration in your life and always believe in yourself through all the pain and hardship in life and I'm proud to say all that and promote peace while inspiring those in the struggle out there in the world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.

7. We gotta save all the homeless people, niggas, gangsters, thugs, and poor people worldwide and I'm proud to understand that. All poor people, niggas, thugs, homeless people, and black people in the struggle worldwide never give up hope out there no matter what and always embrace inspiration in your life. Embrace inspiration in your life when you're in the struggle because that's all you can really do when you're poor and struggling, have nothing, and have to go through so much hardship in life in this cruel world. Use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help inspire you and bring peace to you and your family's lives and neighborhoods if at all possible since families everywhere may be in a constant struggle out there in this hard world depending on where they live and grew up. Always embrace inspiration in your life no matter what and never give up in this fucked up world and always believe in yourself no matter what people think of you in this world, those people aren't living your life, you are and I'm proud to inspire all that. Listen to songs like 2Pac's "Until the End of Time," "Ballad of a Dead Soulja," and "Life Goes On" when you need inspiration in your life and when you're struggling out there. Never surrender, always have hope and embrace inspiration in your life no matter how hard shit gets out there and I'm proud to say that and empower and inspire black people and niggas in the struggle worldwide. And also always try to use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help you and your family's lives to be as peaceful as they can possibly be in this constant hard life that we all have to live everyday as human beings on this planet. It's a constant struggle out here in this hard world and because it's so hard for everybody on this planet that's what Pac made "Changes" for, to inspire us, to promote peace, and to help everybody out there in the struggle worldwide and so let's respect 2Pac's death and try to promote peace with the help of his "Changes" song and also start inspiring each other as humans with his music and lifestyle as well. If we all chill, listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song, and leave the violence to our fiction and music while treating each other with love and respect as well, things will get easier for everybody on this planet and then finally Pac's efforts to help change this world will finally be realized. Let's respect 2Pac's death and efforts to help change this world and all the people struggling in it by listening to "Changes" and chilling out, y'know what I'm saying? I'm proud to believe all that and support helping oppressed people, black people, and niggas in the struggle worldwide with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. Everybody stay strong out there, never give up no matter how hard this world tries to beat you down, and rest in peace 2Pac, you will forever be remembered for everything that you did for us on this planet Earth.
8. Let's listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and try to leave the violence to our fiction and music on this planet since Pac had to die and risk his life for social change, his music, lifestyle, and his "Changes" song. I feel like Pac would have wanted that which is why he made "Changes" in the first place, so try to use "Changes" to leave violence to our fiction and music or you could use his Code of Thug Life to keep beef away from normal civilians if you can, I personally don't know much about the Code of Thug Life but I felt that's what 2Pac made it for so I felt I should bring it up. I'm proud to understand all that, Rest in peace Tupac Shakur; you will be remembered in all of time for everything that you did and all your efforts for this planet.
9. If you can't leave the violence to our fiction and music with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song then options like these can be a substitute: doing a consensual fight, doing a sparring

match, keeping your beefs and conflicts with your enemies away from innocent people uninvolved, using music as a platform of expression, playing a sport, playing a video game, doing a competition of any kind, or anything else like that can substitute for violence in this world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to recommend all that.

10. I hope all of you in the struggle out there aren't giving up hope out there, 2Pac's song "Hold On, Be Strong" for life, y'know what I'm saying? Always embrace inspiration in your life and always have hope in this hard life on this planet. Especially for all the poor people, thugs, gangsters, niggas, impoverished people, starving people, and black people in the struggle out there, if you stay true to yourself and always believe in a greater future, I can almost guarantee that things will get better for you and your family out there in this cruel world. Never give up hope and always embrace inspiration in your life for all the people in the struggle out there and I'm proud to understand that and inspire poor people, thugs, gangsters, niggas, impoverished people, starving people, and black people in the struggle worldwide. Also listen to the song by Young Noble from the Outlawz "Do It from the Heart" and heed to its message. 2Pac would have wanted that too, I just know it. Listen to Pac's music, Edidon's "The Move-ment" song, Young Noble's "Do It from the Heart," and the other Outlawz and Thug Life members' music for inspiration in this world. Young Noble's "Do It from the Heart" song from the Outlawz for life, rest in peace Tupac, you were one of a kind, I never met you but your lifestyle and music meant a lot to me. Rest in peace 2Pac, you will never be forgotten for all your efforts on this planet in all of human history, and rest in peace for any Outlawz and Thug Life members that passed away as well, thanks for everything y'all did for this planet and this world. 2Pac even if I never met you in my lifetime, you will forever live on in my heart and in the hearts of many others on this planet Earth, we'll never forget you no matter what. Rest in peace Tupac Shakur, I'm proud to say all that I have written here from the bottom of my heart and will always remember Tupac Shakur in all of time.
11. Never judge a nigga, gangster, thug, poor and homeless person, or black person by their appearance or stereotyping. Always judge any person on this planet based on the person and their personality and I'm proud to understand that. It's time to listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and end the racist looks and prejudging based on appearance toward people and I'm proud to understand that. You should always judge people based on the person and who they are, not stereotyping and appearances. And 2Pac helped me understand that especially, so I feel I gotta carry on his message with the help of "Changes" helping me do that for the world. So yeah, I'll say now that people gotta chill and listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and stop prejudging poor people, niggas, gangsters, thugs, and black people and all people for that matter. That's the only way we gonna end all these problems as human beings on this Earth, let's stop prejudging each other, chill, relax, and live in peace on this Earth. It's the least we could do for Pac's death and his efforts for the people of this planet Earth, he left us his music and his song "Changes" for a reason, y'know what I'm saying? Let's respect Pac and his efforts for social change by listening to "Changes" and stop prejudging each other and finally start living in peace on this planet. That's the least we could do for Pac I believe and I'm proud to believe that and

support 2Pac's "Changes" to end all prejudice. Rest in peace Tupac Shakur, you will never be forgotten on this planet for everything that you did for us, I promise.

12. I'm a thug and I'm proud.
13. I'm a gangster and I'm proud.
14. I'm a nigga and I'm proud.
15. Always remember 2Pac's definition of N.I.G.G.A. from his song "Words of Wisdom" being Never Ignorant Getting Goals Accomplished and I'm proud to understand that.
16. I'm a real nigga like Pac was and still is and I'm proud.
17. You can be a badass in this world and still do things in life with heart, goodness, and compassion like 2Pac did in his lifetime, with his music, and also like with Young Noble's from the Outlawz message in his song "Do It from the Heart" and I'm proud to understand that. 2Pac songs like "Hit 'Em Up," "Dear Mama," "2 of Amerikaz Most Wanted," "So Many Tears," "Bomb First (My Second Reply)," and "Do For Love" show that and I'm proud to understand that.
18. I'm the hardest and baddest motherfucker out there and I'm still a good person like 2Pac was and I'm proud to be that way. 2Pac showed you can be dope, hard, and badass motherfucker while still being good, emotional, and compassionate. Let's respect Pac's death and listen to his song "Changes" to help end all these problems in real life for good and try to leave violence and all that to our fiction and music with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. Celebrate how bad and badass you are in our fiction and music while leaving it there along with violence if we can. Let's all chill and listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and live in peace and be good in real life otherwise all these problems will never go away and 2Pac's efforts and hard work will be in vain. I'm proud to understand that and support trying to leave evil and violence to our fiction and music, rest in peace Tupac Shakur, you will be forever remembered in all of human history on this planet for everything that you did for us human beings in this world.
19. Always be proud to be a nigga, gangster, thug, poor and homeless person, or black person in this world. Don't let the world try to knock you down, always believe in yourself no matter what people think of you. Living as life as a black person, poor person, nigga, gangster, thug, or homeless person is hard in this rough life, black people, niggas, gangsters, thugs, poor people, and homeless people are usually born in violent and poor neighborhoods typically in this world. 2Pac gave us his song "Changes" to help us bring peace to violent neighborhoods for all black people, niggas, gangsters, thugs, and poor people in the struggle worldwide, so let's respect 2Pac's efforts and death with his music and his "Changes" song and chill and use 2Pac's "Changes" to help try to end any violence out there in the world because Pac died and risked his life to help us in the struggle and he gave us "Changes" to help bring peace everywhere for everybody in the world. Let's respect Pac's death to save and help black people, niggas, gangsters, thugs,

poor people, and all people in the struggle worldwide by listening to 2Pac's "Changes" song and using 2Pac's "Changes" to help try to leave the violence to our fiction and music, if we do that then 2Pac's hard work will have paid off and everyone's lives will get better in this world and I'm proud to understand that and support helping black people, niggas, gangsters, thugs, poor people, and all people in the struggle worldwide with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. Also listen to 2Pac songs like "Words of Wisdom" and "White Man'z World" and remember what 2Pac said being a nigga means, Never Ignorant Getting Goals Accomplished, N.I.G.G.A. Don't lose out in this white man's world like 2Pac said in his song "White Man'z World" and stay smart and intelligent for all the black people, niggas, and other poor and homeless people in the struggle out there and I'm proud to inspire and empower black people, niggas, gangsters, thugs and poor and struggling people worldwide and encourage them not to lose out in this white man's world.

20. We gotta stop shooting innocent black people, niggas, people, and young black males on these streets and I'm proud to understand that and support stopping the police from hurting and killing innocent black people and innocent people in this world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. Let's listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and stop shooting innocent black people and innocent people and let's provide people in the struggling worldwide with money and opportunities so they won't have to struggle anymore and be poor and starving on the streets and won't have to worry about being shot falsely by the cops as well with the help of 2Pac's song "Changes" and I'm proud to understand all that and want to help poor people, niggas, gangsters, thugs, and black people in the struggle worldwide with 2Pac's "Changes" song.
21. I'll never identify with or connect with cops and policemen in this world but I feel I should still write this message because my best friend's father is a cop and policeman and he's a great man. I have no disrespect for the cops and policemen with nothing but good in their heart that aren't evil in this world and don't execute police brutality like the bad ones. I may not connect with them or understand their mentality and lifestyle of being a policeman and being a part of law enforcement but hey if you risk your life for your citizens and actually have good in your heart then I can at the very least respect that even if I'm all about inspiring regular citizens, black people, niggas, gangsters, thugs, poor people, homeless people, and underrepresented and oppressed people worldwide. Black people, niggas, thugs, gangsters, poor people, homeless people, and other people have come to hate the cops and police for good reason as expressed in our movies and music but I can't hate on the good ones that do things like be patient on when to use a gun and are actually good people at the end of the day. I mean my best friend's dad is a cop and policeman and he's a great man like I mentioned before. I still don't like cops and policemen generally in the stereotypical sense because when I see one I do things like get tense and on guard but regardless of my aversion and hatred for most cops and policemen if a cop has good in his heart then I can't completely hate them especially since my best friend's father is a cop and policemen, unlike the bad cops who I'll always resent in this world no matter what and I felt I should share my thoughts with people on that subject. So because my best friend's father is a cop and policeman and I know he's a great man, that's my message to all the good cops and policemen out there regardless of me

generally not liking the cops and police anyway still whenever I see them in the world and all that and I'm proud to say all that. I will always still generally not like the cops and policemen typically in this world and will always identify with regular people of all types in this world and will always empower black people, poor people, niggas, gangsters, thugs, homeless people, and other people of all types in this world because they're apart of the universe and world I'm apart of and I identify with them and always will connect with them and understand regular people that aren't cops and policemen more. So with all that being said I will continue promoting things like hating the police and all that especially since cops and policemen did nothing but bother me a lot especially when I was homeless while writing this story and novel, but regardless I still felt I should write this message since again my best friend's father is a cop and policeman and he's a great man and I'm proud to say all that. Let's try to leave the violence to our fiction and music anyway with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and we won't have to deal with most of this craziness anyway in this world. I'm proud to write this message even though I will always still hate the cops and policemen worldwide just like everybody else out there in this world. This proud statement is a tribute to my friend Madison Burke and his father who is a cop and policeman and a great man.

22. I'm a ghetto black person and I'm proud.
23. I'm a non-ghetto black person and I'm proud.
24. For all the black people in the struggle out there, don't worry you know what I'm saying? Embrace inspiration in your life and all the poverty and hardship will get better I can almost guarantee you. Just believe in yourself out there in all these hard times and things will start looking up and I'm proud to understand that and inspire black people everywhere.
25. Everyone has their own opinions on this topic but my personal opinion on the whole acting black and white thing is generally I don't believe anyone's acting any type of way but rather people are just being themselves. Black people have their own personalities both extrovert and introvert and based on the Myers-Briggs Type Indicator so they're acting black still regardless of how they behave, speak, and act in their life. Their just being themselves and that's it, since there's sixteen personality types based on the Myers-Briggs that explains people's personalities and differences and all that. And among those Myers-Briggs extroverted and introverted personalities people are still different based on their culture, upbringing, and everything else when they grew up and their personality traits, so that's my opinion on that subject, black people are still acting black yet their just being themselves and that's it and 2Pac's "Changes" song can help people respect people's personalities both introvert and extrovert in this world along with the Myers-Briggs as well and I'm proud to understand all that.
26. Let's use 2Pac's "Changes" song and be respectful with how black people speak and behave in this world for ghetto blacks and non-ghetto blacks in this world. It's the only way to end all these disagreements in the black community and I'm proud to understand

that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song, the Myers-Briggs can help us out with this too.

27. Ghetto blacks, non-ghetto blacks, foreign blacks, and other different types of black people in this world should try to use 2Pac's "Changes" song and to help respect how each other speak, act, behave, and respect their interests on this planet. Black people are all different in this world and have different personalities based on the Myers-Briggs, so their all acting black just in different styles and fashions based on their personalities, interests, and experiences in life. So the only way to end any conflict among the black community and black communities worldwide is to listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and love and respect each other on this planet or else any problems that exist will still be here and I'm proud to understand all that.
28. Never give up hope out there for all the black people in the struggle out there in the world. Embrace hope and inspiration in your life and through all the hardship and pain things will get better for you in your life I can almost guarantee you that. Listen to 2Pac's songs and music for inspiration when you're down and going through a rough time in this life and I'm proud to say that and inspire black people in the struggle worldwide.
29. Black people in the struggle worldwide whether you're in the ghetto or from whatever neighborhood and economic background on this planet, never give up hope. I know it's hard out there and your tired of struggling, being poor, and starving. Just keep believing in yourself and embrace inspiration in your life and I can almost guarantee things will get better for you and your family. Listen to 2Pac's music when your depressed and stressed out there and always heed to the message in his song "White Man'z World" and be as smart as you can be so you don't lose to white people on this planet Earth intellectually like Pac said in the song. Always remember what 2Pac said what it means to be a nigga and his encouragement for helping and empowering black people and niggas in his songs "White Man'z World" and "Words of Wisdom," N.I.G.G.A. Never Ignorant Getting Goals Accomplished. Black people can do anything they set their mind too in this world and do great things, so never give up hope and always believe in yourself no matter what the world thinks or says about you. And always remember to be proud to be black like 2Pac says in "White Man'z World" and be smart and embrace inspiration in your life and I'm proud to understand all that and inspire all black people. And ghetto black people and non-ghetto black people need to understand each other with 2Pac's "Changes" song on this planet and I'm proud to understand that. All people have different personalities in this world including black people. Myers-Briggs shows there are sixteen personalities types both introvert and extrovert, nobody is acting a certain way with the way they act, speak, or behave in this world, they're just being themselves based on their personalities and how they were raised and that's it in relation to the Myers-Briggs Type Indicator, so let's listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and respect each other personalities as black people in this world. And also let's portray blacks more accurately too in the media in like television, movies, and all that, black extroverts and black introverts should be catered to equally and portrayed equally in media so everyone can be happy and feel accepted. All black people are still black and acting black regardless of how they behave; speak, whatever their interests are, their tastes of music, and whether they're an introvert or

extrovert in this world. Black people just have different personalities just like any other race on this planet and 2Pac's "Changes" and the Myers-Briggs Type Indicator can help us understand that. And I'll write this next statement for black people who like black music along with a variety of other music genres as well and for blacks that simply have their own personal taste in music that don't fall in those genres because black people's music interests should be respected by other people in this world, I'm black and alongside soul, blues, hip hop, rap, R&B, gospel, jazz, and other black music I also like multiple other different types of genres of music too or I don't personally listen to any of these genres of music and have my own specific tastes and preferences in music and I'm black and I'm proud and love of my music preferences regardless of wherever they fall. Let's listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and end all this arguing and disagreements and instead listen to 2Pac's messages "Changes" and "White Man's World" and respect each other, our interests, and personalities while always embracing inspiration in our lives and never giving up hope in this cruel world because life's hard enough without the extra baggage of how we treat each other too on this planet like 2Pac expresses in his "Changes" song. If we listen to 2Pac's "White Man's World" and "Changes" and support each other as black people on this planet Earth, then life will start getting better for all of us on this planet. So let's do that before we make mistakes we can't take back like 2Pac says in "White Man's World" and I'm proud to understand that and I'm proud to be black and embrace compassion, intelligence, and inspiration as a black person in the constant struggle in this white man's world.

30. Let's as humans give money to the poor and starving black people, niggas, gangster, thugs, homeless people, impoverished people, all other people in the struggle worldwide so these people won't have to starve and be poor and struggle anymore in this world and I'm proud to understand that. Let's help these people like in the intro to 2Pac's "Changes" song and consistently share money with all poor people in the struggle worldwide so we can finally put an end to starvation and poverty for all poor people worldwide and I'm proud to understand that.
31. If you're a poor and starving black person, nigga, gangster, thug, homeless person, and impoverished person in this world then never give up hope out there. Embrace inspiration in your life and never give up hope no matter how hard life gets in your hard life on this planet. I'll try to do my part and have the world listen to 2Pac's songs like "Letter to the President" and "Changes" so you can get money in your pockets and food in your stomachs in this cruel world full of starvation, poverty, and world hunger and I'm proud to understand that and empower poor people in the struggle worldwide.
32. If you're a poor person, nigga, gangster, thug, black person, or anybody else out there who struggles in this tough world, never give up hope and embrace inspiration in your life because nothing can stop the power of inspiration in this world, 2Pac songs like "Until the End of Time" shows how powerful inspiration can be, y'know what I'm saying? I'm proud to understand that and empower and inspire people in the struggle in this world.

33. Nothing can stop niggas and black people when they band together to fight for their freedom peacefully on this planet like 2Pac says in his song "I Wonder If Heaven Got a Ghetto" and I'm proud to understand that and inspire niggas and black people in the struggle worldwide. Never give up hope out there, embrace inspiration in your life, and always believe in yourself no matter what the world thinks of you in this world. Niggas and black people can do anything they set their mind too as long as they always believe in their self and embrace inspiration in their life, be like Pac and never give up hope through all the pain, rain, and hardship and always listen to Young Noble's song from the Outlawz "Do It from the Heart" while embracing inspiration in your life and I'm proud to understand that and inspire niggas and black people worldwide.
34. People already typically know this generally but a subject such as this generally should be reinforced here, generally if you're not black you can't say nigga and have to say the N-word instead. There are some exceptions if you're from the hood, ghetto, or other low income communities while being like Latino or something from those kinds of neighborhoods and also depends on personality and all that. It gets really complicated on who can say nigga for any non-black people and people debate it on this planet all the time. But in general I write this so people that wouldn't normally say nigga and typically aren't supposed to by societal norms don't say it because of the content of this story and novel your reading now and so I don't get blamed and criticized from parents and adults for allegedly promoting people who normally wouldn't say nigga to say it because I don't support that. People on this planet know inherently who can and can't say nigga in this world and it should be self-explanatory but I felt I should write this since the word nigga is going to be a very common word used throughout the novel series for multiple reasons. So that's my disclaimer for all the people out there and readers when concerning the word and usage of the word nigga in my novel and story series and franchise. I'm proud to say all that and hope everything's sorted out when it comes to this topic.

Proud List

#3

Proud Statements

1. I respect all nations and countries and their laws based in their respective country and nation on this planet. I believe in equality for all but I will respect countries and nations on this planet with laws where it is illegal to be an LGBTQ person in their country and nation, I will only hope 2Pac's "Changes" song will eventually help equality for everyone on this planet as time progresses in human history on this planet Earth. With that being said I will write the following sentence while respecting all nations and countries and their laws concerning LGBTQ people in their country and nation on this planet, I will write the following sentence mainly for LGBTQ people in countries and nations that have it legal to be LGBTQ in their respective country and nation. Those countries and nations that have anti-gay laws or countries and nations and that do not favor LGBTQ people do not need to read or acknowledge the following sentence if they so choose to do so, it is entirely up to each particular country and nation on this planet to decide how to handle their laws and ways of life concerning their LGBTQ people in their particular country and nation. I respect every country and nation on this planet Earth and their laws on this

planet despite my personal views for equality for all. With that being said I will write following statement and sentence while respect those countries and nations. I'm gay/feminine male or I'm black and I'm gay/feminine male and I'm proud.

2. I respect all nations and countries and their laws based in their respective country and nation on this planet. I believe in equality for all but I will respect countries and nations on this planet with laws where it is illegal to be an LGBTQ person in their country and nation, I will only hope 2Pac's "Changes" song will eventually help equality for everyone on this planet as time progresses in human history on this planet Earth. With that being said I will write the following sentence while respecting all nations and countries and their laws concerning LGBTQ people in their country and nation on this planet, I will write the following sentence mainly for LGBTQ people in countries and nations that have it legal to be LGBTQ in their respective country and nation. Those countries and nations that have anti-gay laws or countries and nations and that do not favor LGBTQ people do not need to read or acknowledge the following sentence if they so choose to do so, it is entirely up to each particular country and nation on this planet to decide how to handle their laws and ways of life concerning their LGBTQ people in their particular country and nation. I respect every country and nation on this planet Earth and their laws on this planet despite my personal views for equality for all. With that being said I will write following statement and sentence while respect those countries and nations. I'm lesbian/non-feminine female or I'm black and I'm lesbian/non-feminine female and I'm proud.
3. I'm a non-emotional female or black female and I'm proud.
4. I'm an emotional male or black male and I'm proud.
5. I'm a masculine/non-emotional male or black male and I'm proud to be me too.
6. I'm a feminine/emotional female or black female and I'm proud to be me too.
7. 2Pac was one of the hardest, toughest, and most badass people out there that ever lived in this world while at the same time being one of the nicest, emotional, and most compassionate people to ever walk this Earth as well. He was both tough and emotional when you analyze songs like "Hit 'Em Up," "Bomb First (My Second Reply)," "Me and My Girlfriend," and "Breathin'" compared to songs like "Dear Mama," "So Many Tears," "When Thugz Cry," and "Teardrops and Closed Caskets." These songs show the duality of 2Pac by showcasing his strong, tough side and compassionate, emotional side, these songs and the duality of 2Pac show that both genders can be tough and in tune with their emotions as well equally in this world. Because of this understanding of Pac, I support the HeforShe movement popularized by Emma Watson and I support things like the Myers-Briggs Type Indicator along with songs from Young Noble from the Outlawz like "Do It from the Heart" as well since both genders can have equality for both genders in this world and both can express emotions and be badass in this world like 2Pac was as a person with two personalities and I'm proud to understand and support all that with the help of all the things mentioned above, the Myers-Briggs, and 2Pac's "Changes" song.

8. When I mention how 2Pac has two personalities I mean he had a good side and bad side that was really vamped up is what I'm saying, he still had one base personality and personality type in which I'll get into in the proud statement mentioned below but yeah I felt I had to clear that up to not confuse anybody out there. You're Myers-Briggs personality type is one type and it cannot change but Pac just had two personalities of while still having his same Myers-Briggs personality type like everybody that I'll mention below, his two personality thing that made him unique on this planet was him being extremely good and bad that was vamped up in one person hence his name 2Pac and I'm proud to make that clear to people while introducing the Myers-Briggs Type Indicator to the world.
9. 2Pac is a major influence on *Spirit Story* and my character Sean and his two forms but the actual characters themselves and their personalities aren't based on Pac and his two personalities, rather my character Sean's two personalities are based on two main characters from the two manga and anime series *Yu Yu Hakusho* and *Dragon Ball* that are huge influence on the creation of *Spirit Story* as well. The character good Sean is based on Goku and the character bad Sean is based on Yusuke Urameshi, Pac's vamped up good and bad side are just an influence and inspiration on their personalities but the character Sean and his personalities good Sean and bad Sean and their behaviors in the story are based on those two anime characters I mentioned above. So keep that in mind when you see Sean and his personalities throughout the story, 2Pac's personalities don't represent Sean's in the story except for the good and bad side part of it, the actual good and bad personalities of Sean in the story are drawn rather from Goku and Yusuke from those manga and anime series I mentioned before and I'm proud to make that clear to the reader here now. So to make it clear again and summarize when you see good Sean in the story and his personality and behavior don't think of Pac think of Goku instead and the same thing when bad Sean is out in the story think of Yusuke, Pac's personalities only influence the character Sean because of the duality personalities of being both good and bad vamped up to that max that was in 2Pac as a person and human being on this planet hence his name 2Pac so that's all I wanted to make clear to the reader here today of me writing this now and I'm proud to give that in depth understanding to the reader.
10. The Myers-Briggs Type Indicator showcases the sixteen personalities types that people can be when their born on this planet Earth. You can be either one of the SJ Guardians temperament personality types that are ESTJ, ESFJ, ISTJ, or ISFJ, one of the SP Artisans temperament personality types that are ESTP, ESFP, ISTP, or ISFP, one of the NF Idealists temperament personality types that are ENFJ, ENFP, INFJ, or INFP, or one of the NT Rationals temperament personality types that are ENTJ, ENTP, INTJ, or INTP. Each of these personalities have a place in the world and define the spectrum of the human personality and behavior and they show us the way people act and how we as humans are all different for people of all cultures, races, genders, sexualities, ethnicities, and backgrounds worldwide. If you took out any one of these personalities then humanity as a whole would fail and balance for the human personality and the numerous jobs and strengths that each personality brings to the table in this world would be out of order, imbalanced, and out of place. So that is why people act and behave differently regardless

of their gender, sexuality, race, ethnicity, and culture in this world, one of the sixteen Myers-Briggs personalities are in each of us as human beings on this planet Earth, and among those sixteen Myers-Briggs personalities people are different types of each personality based on their upbringing, their culture, race, where they grew up, how they we're raised by their family, and other factors that affect human personality and development. After years of guessing on this planet, now the world knows why people are different in terms of personality and behavior, this understanding will help people in this world understand and connect with each other as human beings on this planet Earth. The Myers-Briggs personality assessment is the most popular, accurate, and trusted personality assessment in the world and people of all cultures, races, genders, sexualities, and ethnicities everywhere in the world have one of these Myers-Briggs personality types within them. I'm proud understand all that and support the Myers-Briggs Type Indicator and use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help people finally fully understand people's different personalities on this planet and why people are different in this world. You can take the personality assessment and find out your type, you can read each types description and the one that resonates with you the most is most likely the correct one. People mistype themselves all the time through answering the questions inaccurately on occasion and other factors so reading each personality description until one resonates perfectly with you is good to do whether you take the assessment or not. If you're wondering what Tupac Shakur's MBTI personality type was, he was a natural born leader ENFJ which was Pac's personality type, many other historical black leaders we're ENFJ as well and you can see his personality type show through by studying his extroversion, his lifestyle, and his music like with the songs he made like "Changes," "Until the End of Time," "Dear Mama," "Hit 'Em Up," "Me Against the World," "Old School," along with other music and songs that he made on this planet. 2Pac was a natural born leader and an amazing human being that put hard work and passion into everything that he did and he was a blessing to this world full of all these problems and corruption on this planet Earth. Thank goodness he was born into this world and did everything that he did before he passed away, rest in peace Tupac Shakur you will be remembered in all time periods to come on this planet Earth, thank you for everything that you did for us black people in the struggle and all other people in the struggle worldwide as well on this planet Earth. If you're wondering my personality type as the author Shane McDowell of this novel *Spirit Story*, my personality type is INFJ. I'm a natural introvert who's African American and who is very chill and relaxed most of the time. Me and Tupac are very different, he was very extroverted and in his 1994 interview he said people enjoyed his big mouth and all that. I'm different though from him in that sense, I'm a fairly chill and quiet dude most of the time. I like to socialize and everything but after certain periods I need to recharge and be to myself like most introverts of all races out there and then I'm ready to hang with people again. If people are curious my four or say five main characters' personality types of this story series are: INFJ for Noah, ESFP for Adam, INTJ for Vlad, ENFP for regular Sean, and ESTP for other Sean. Anyways I just wanted to inform the reader about all this, extroversion and introversion both have a place in this world and all people have a variety of personalities out there and the Myers-Briggs assessment helps us understand that so let's try to use 2Pac's "Changes" to help understand each other on this planet and I'm proud to understand that.

11. Introversion and introverts should be respected by all people in this world. Of course I like extroverts and other introverts love and respect extroverts as well but we as introverts feel it's time for us to shine with the help of 2Pac's T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E. acronym and "Changes" song, all my black introverts too both male and female stay strong out there. Introverts can bring a lot to the table like with them having different strengths, job strengths, talents, and techniques that they can only do or do better than most extroverts. Susan Cain wrote a book named *Quiet: The Power of Introverts in a World That Can't Stop Talking* and did a TED Talk about empowering introverts in her talk and discussion, well I'm here to do the same since introverts deserve equal treatment and equality on a large scale worldwide on this planet Earth. Introverts and extroverts deserve equality equally in this world and 2Pac's "Changes" song can help introverts of all cultures, race, genders, and ethnicities reach that equality and acceptance. Introverts come with all people like black introverts, white introverts, Latino introverts, Japanese introverts, Chinese introverts, Korean introverts, and all other introverts from different cultures, races, genders, and all that in the world. Being an introvert and being shy are totally different things, you can have shy extroverts out there in the world too, introversion has to do with your brain processing and taking the world in internally and losing energy overtime in social situations and with eventually having to recharge with some alone time before you can come out and socialize again. That's all it is really how people interact, think, and behave in the world separates introversion and extroversion on this planet Earth. 2Pac's "Changes" song can help bring equality for all introverts everywhere in the world help us get the respect we deserve in this world we live in as human beings on this planet Earth. Extroverts and introverts can get along great and they do already get along but on occasion sometimes extroverts discourage introverts from being themselves which in turn inhibits their strengths and screws all of society because this world needs introverts of all cultures, races, and genders. Extroverts are great people and introverts are great people, all we ask is some acceptance and equality in this world, that's all and I'm proud to support that mentality for all introverts everywhere in the world. 2Pac's "Changes" song can help society accept introverts worldwide and the Myers-Briggs Type Indicator can help us understand both introverts and extroverts alike in this world too. I've decided to make an acronym out of the word I.N.T.R.O.V.E.R.T. just like Pac did with things like T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E. and all that. I'm proud to have made that and will hope its meaning of In No Time Really Overrepresented Voices Empathize Real Tranquility will sink in and settle down in cultures worldwide because it basically means that eventually extroverts and all of humanity will come to love and respect introversion and introverts in the societies we live in due time I'm sure of it, and 2Pac's "Changes" can help with that too. Anyways that's my tribute and sentiment, I will hope that with me writing this that introverts and introversion worldwide will become accepted in all cultures worldwide because T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E. says The Hate U Gave Little Infants Fucks Everybody so the only thing we can do as humans now is listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and accept everybody including introverts worldwide and I'm proud to understand that and support introverts worldwide on this planet Earth.

12. I'm an introvert and I'm proud.

13. I'm an extrovert and I'm proud to be me too.

14. I'm a male introvert and I'm proud.
15. I'm a female introvert and I'm proud.
16. I'm a black male introvert and I'm proud.
17. I'm a black female introvert and I'm proud.
18. I'm a male extrovert and I'm proud to be me too.
19. I'm a female extrovert and I'm proud to be me too.
20. I'm a black male extrovert and I'm proud to be me too.
21. I'm a black female extrovert and I'm proud to be me too.
22. I'm an ESTJ and I'm proud.
23. I'm a male ESTJ and I'm proud.
24. I'm a female ESTJ and I'm proud.
25. I'm a black male ESTJ and I'm proud.
26. I'm a black female ESTJ and I'm proud.
27. I'm an ESFJ and I'm proud.
28. I'm a female ESFJ and I'm proud.
29. I'm a male ESFJ and I'm proud.
30. I'm a black female ESFJ and I'm proud.
31. I'm a black male ESFJ and I'm proud.
32. I'm an ISTJ and I'm proud.
33. I'm a male ISTJ and I'm proud.
34. I'm female ISTJ and I'm proud.

35. I'm a black male ISTJ and I'm proud.
36. I'm a black female ISTJ and I'm proud.
37. I'm an ISFJ and I'm proud.
38. I'm a female ISFJ and I'm proud.
39. I'm a male ISFJ and I'm proud.
40. I'm a black female ISFJ and I'm proud.
41. I'm a black male ISFJ and I'm proud.
42. I'm an ESTP and I'm proud.
43. I'm a male ESTP and I'm proud.
44. I'm a female ESTP and I'm proud.
45. I'm a black male ESTP and I'm proud.
46. I'm a black female ESTP and I'm proud.
47. I'm an ESFP and I'm proud.
48. I'm a female ESFP and I'm proud.
49. I'm a male ESFP and I'm proud.
50. I'm a black female ESFP and I'm proud.
51. I'm a black male ESFP and I'm proud.
52. I'm an ISTP and I'm proud.
53. I'm a male ISTP and I'm proud.
54. I'm a female ISTP and I'm proud.
55. I'm a black male ISTP and I'm proud.
56. I'm a black female ISTP and I'm proud.

57. I'm an ISFP and I'm proud.
58. I'm a female ISFP and I'm proud.
59. I'm a male ISFP and I'm proud.
60. I'm a black female ISFP and I'm proud.
61. I'm a black male ISFP and I'm proud.
62. I'm an ENFJ and I'm proud.
63. I'm a female ENFJ and I'm proud.
64. I'm a male ENFJ and I'm proud.
65. I'm a black female ENFJ and I'm proud.
66. I'm a black male ENFJ and I'm proud.
67. I'm an ENFP and I'm proud.
68. I'm a female ENFP and I'm proud.
69. I'm a male ENFP and I'm proud.
70. I'm a black female ENFP and I'm proud.
71. I'm a black male ENFP and I'm proud.
72. I'm an INFJ and I'm proud.
73. I'm a female INFJ and I'm proud.
74. I'm a male INFJ and I'm proud.
75. I'm a black female INFJ and I'm proud.
76. I'm a black male INFJ and I'm proud.
77. I'm an INFP and I'm proud.

78. I'm a female INFP and I'm proud.
79. I'm a male INFP and I'm proud.
80. I'm a black female INFP and I'm proud.
81. I'm a black male INFP and I'm proud.
82. I'm an ENTJ and I'm proud.
83. I'm a male ENTJ and I'm proud.
84. I'm a female ENTJ and I'm proud.
85. I'm a black male ENTJ and I'm proud.
86. I'm a black female ENTJ and I'm proud.
87. I'm an ENTP and I'm proud.
88. I'm a male ENTP and I'm proud.
89. I'm a female ENTP and I'm proud.
90. I'm a black male ENTP and I'm proud.
91. I'm a black female ENTP and I'm proud.
92. I'm an INTJ and I'm proud.
93. I'm a male INTJ and I'm proud.
94. I'm a female INTJ and I'm proud.
95. I'm a black male INTJ and I'm proud.
96. I'm a black female INTJ and I'm proud.
97. I'm an INTP and I'm proud.
98. I'm a male INTP and I'm proud.
99. I'm a female INTP and I'm proud.

100. I'm a black male INTP and I'm proud.
101. I'm a black female INTP and I'm proud.
102. Always be proud to be an introvert or black introvert.
103. Always be proud to be an extrovert or black extrovert.
104. Introverts and extroverts of all races, genders, and ethnicities should always get along and treat each other with respect and love and treasure each other's strengths, weaknesses, and differences in this world and I'm proud to understand that. SJs, SPs, NFs, and NTs should also love and respect each other and their strengths, weaknesses, and differences in this world as well and I'm proud to understand all that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
105. I respect all nations and countries and their laws based in their respective country and nation on this planet. I believe in equality for all but I will respect countries and nations on this planet with laws where it is illegal to be an LGBTQ person in their country and nation, I will only hope 2Pac's "Changes" song will eventually help equality for everyone on this planet as time progresses in human history on this planet Earth. With that being said I will write the following sentence while respecting all nations and countries and their laws concerning LGBTQ people in their country and nation on this planet, I will write the following sentence mainly for LGBTQ people in countries and nations that have it legal to be LGBTQ in their respective country and nation. Those countries and nations that have anti-gay laws or countries and nations and that do not favor LGBTQ people do not need to read or acknowledge the following sentence if they so choose to do so, it is entirely up to each particular country and nation on this planet to decide how to handle their laws and ways of life concerning their LGBTQ people in their particular country and nation. I respect every country and nation on this planet Earth and their laws on this planet despite my personal views for equality for all. With that being said I will write following statement and sentence while respect those countries and nations. I'm bisexual or I'm black and I'm bisexual and I'm proud.
106. I respect all nations and countries and their laws based in their respective country and nation on this planet. I believe in equality for all but I will respect countries and nations on this planet with laws where it is illegal to be an LGBTQ person in the ir country and nation, I will only hope 2Pac's "Changes" song will eventually help equality for everyone on this planet as time progresses in human history on this planet Earth. With that being said I will write the following sentence while respecting all nations and countries and their laws concerning LGBTQ people in their country and nation on this planet, I will write the following sentence mainly for LGBTQ people in countries and nations that have it legal to be LGBTQ in their respective country and nation. Those countries and nations that have anti-gay laws or countries and nations and that do not favor LGBTQ people do not need to read or acknowledge the following sentence if they so choose to do so, it is entirely up to each particular country and nation on this planet to

decide how to handle their laws and ways of life concerning their LGBTQ people in their particular country and nation. I respect every country and nation on this planet Earth and their laws on this planet despite my personal views for equality for all. With that being said I will write following statement and sentence while respect those countries and nations. I'm transgender or I'm black and I'm transgender and I'm proud.

107. I respect all nations and countries and their laws based in their respective country and nation on this planet. I believe in equality for all but I will respect countries and nations on this planet with laws where it is illegal to be an LGBTQ person in their country and nation, I will only hope 2Pac's "Changes" song will eventually help equality for everyone on this planet as time progresses in human history on this planet Earth. With that being said I will write the following sentence while respecting all nations and countries and their laws concerning LGBTQ people in their country and nation on this planet, I will write the following sentence mainly for LGBTQ people in countries and nations that have it legal to be LGBTQ in their respective country and nation. Those countries and nations that have anti-gay laws or countries and nations and that do not favor LGBTQ people do not need to read or acknowledge the following sentence if they so choose to do so, it is entirely up to each particular country and nation on this planet to decide how to handle their laws and ways of life concerning their LGBTQ people in their particular country and nation. I respect every country and nation on this planet Earth and their laws on this planet despite my personal views for equality for all. With that being said I will write following statement and sentence while respect those countries and nations. I'm queer or I'm black and I'm queer and I'm proud.

108. I respect all nations and countries and their laws based in their respective country and nation on this planet. I believe in equality for all but I will respect countries and nations on this planet with laws where it is illegal to be an LGBTQ person in their country and nation, I will only hope 2Pac's "Changes" song will eventually help equality for everyone on this planet as time progresses in human history on this planet Earth. With that being said I will write the following sentence while respecting all nations and countries and their laws concerning LGBTQ people in their country and nation on this planet, I will write the following sentence mainly for LGBTQ people in countries and nations that have it legal to be LGBTQ in their respective country and nation. Those countries and nations that have anti-gay laws or countries and nations and that do not favor LGBTQ people do not need to read or acknowledge the following sentence if they so choose to do so, it is entirely up to each particular country and nation on this planet to decide how to handle their laws and ways of life concerning their LGBTQ people in their particular country and nation. I respect every country and nation on this planet Earth and their laws on this planet despite my personal views for equality for all. With that being said I will write following statement and sentence while respect those countries and nations. I'm a black female introvert lesbian, bisexual, transgender, or queer and I'm proud.

Proud List

#4

Proud Statements

1. Always believe in yourself in this world and have hope always no matter how hard life gets out there. Embrace inspiration in your life and I can almost guarantee you that through all the pain and hardship that things will get better for you and your family and through all the hardship you go through each day in this hard life on this planet will begin to seem like nothing and you'll be able to finally live a more fulfilling and enriched positive life in this world. Never give up hope no matter how hard life gets in this world, inspiration and hope will lead you to the way tranquility and peace of mind in this world and I'm proud to understand that and inspire all people worldwide on this planet Earth.
2. Always embrace inspiration at the center of your life like the music made by Tupac Shakur represents and always embrace imagination at the center of your life like Ray Bradbury once said too and I'm proud to understand that too.
3. Let's listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song because the quality of our fiction and music in this world should always increase not decrease and I'm proud to understand that. Listen to Young Noble's from the Outlawz song "Do It from the Heart" and make good quality and creative fiction and music in this world and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
4. Let's listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and respect introverts and black introverts in this world and I'm proud to understand that.
5. Shyness and introversion are two different things in this world and I'm proud to understand that. Both categories should be empowered in this world though, so with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" always try to respect quiet people in this world and I'm proud to understand that.
6. I'm shy or I'm black and I'm shy and I'm proud.
7. I'm not the shy type or I'm black and I'm not the shy type and I'm proud to be me too.
8. I love partying and/or dancing in my life and I'm proud.
9. I'm not that into partying and/or dancing that much in my life and I'm proud.
10. Through all this pain, suffering, and negativity everywhere in the world, I wanna try to bring positivity back to people's lives out there in the struggle. Always have inspiration in your life, y'know what I'm saying? Things will start looking up if you never give up out there. I know it's hard out there but like Pac said in his "Me Against the World" song, bright mornings come after very dark nights. I'm proud to believe in all that inspire people in the struggle worldwide.
11. With the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song it's time to rid this planet of all evil like Pac says in his "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that. It's time to listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and Young Noble's "Do It from the Heart" song and heal this planet Earth

and all its problems once and for all before humanity goes into ruin and enters into terrible things on this planet like a possible World War III and I'm proud to understand that and support 2Pac's "Changes" song for making a positive difference in this world.

12. Always embrace inspiration and imagination in your life like Pac and Ray Bradbury did in their lives. Nothing can take away your dreams in this world and I'm proud to understand that.
13. Always embrace inspiration in your life and use that inspiration to do great things in this world. And always use that inspiration to inspire others to do other great things in this world as well. Use 2Pac's music to inspire yourself and others that you meet in your life, some great inspiring songs by him to help inspire you are "Until the End of Time" and "Life Goes On" and I'm proud to understand that and will always embrace inspiration in my life and will continue to inspire others as well.
14. Let's respect 2Pac's hard work and death to change this world and listen to his song "Changes" by leaving evil to our fiction and music while suppressing evil in real life as well like he says in his "Changes" song. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and be good in real life while celebrating how badass and bad you are in our fiction and music and by suppressing evil with good in our fiction and music as well, depending on the context and type of people making media for certain target audiences on this planet Earth. Certain content showcases suppressing evil with good and certain content also showcases how badass and bad you are, both are fine to have on this planet as long as people in this world stay good in real life with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and hear its message that he gave us as people when he passed away in this world. With that being said, let's respect 2Pac's death for change in this world and listen to his "Changes" song by leaving evil to our fiction and music while being good in real life and heeding to the messages stated above with how good and evil is portrayed in the media. If we do that and listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" song, then we won't have to deal with as many problems that we've dealt with as a human race for so long on this planet Earth and finally be able to live in peace like 2Pac says in "Changes" as well and I'm proud to understand that.
15. 2Pac said the old ways of doing things weren't working no more in his song "Changes" so let's respect 2Pac's death and listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and always value respect, maturity, love, and being good in real life and leave all evil to our fiction and music along with celebrating how bad you are in our fiction and music as well on this planet and I'm proud to understand that.
16. 2Pac said the old ways of doing things weren't working no more in his song "Changes" so let's respect 2Pac's death and listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and always stay good in our hearts in real life and leave all evil to our fiction and music along with celebrating how bad you are in our fiction and music as well on this planet and I'm proud to understand that.

17. 2Pac said the old ways of doing things weren't working no more in his song "Changes" so let's respect 2Pac's death and listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and always suppress evil in real life with good and I'm proud to understand that.
18. 2Pac said the old ways of doing things weren't working no more in his song "Changes" so let's respect 2Pac's death and listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and always be good in real life and leave evil to our fiction and music and I'm proud to understand that. Either suppress evil with good in our fiction and music or celebrate how bad and badass you are in our fiction and music too and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
19. 2Pac said the old ways of doing things weren't working no more in his song "Changes" so let's respect 2Pac's death and listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and always be good in real life and leave evil to our fiction and music and I'm proud to understand that. When 2Pac says people on this planet Earth should remove the evil out their hearts and replace it with good in his "Changes" song, he's talking about people of all races meaning white people, black people, Asian people, Latino people, Europeans, Australians, and so on. He's speaking to all citizens and all people on this planet Earth of all races, genders, ethnicities, and cultures when he says we as a people need to make a change and no longer be evil on this planet or else all these problems will never go away. That's the only way we can work toward world peace on this planet Earth if all people that are white, black, Hispanic, Asian, and so on with other races, ethnicities, and cultures removed the evil out of their hearts and replaced it with good in this world. I'm proud to make that clear to the world and support suppressing evil in real life and instead promoting leaving all evil to our fiction and music to be suppressed by good with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. Always be good in real life and suppress evil in your heart like 2Pac says in his "Changes" song for people of all races, genders, ethnicities, and cultures in this world like 2Pac expresses in his "Changes" song too.
20. People of all races, genders, ethnicities, and cultures should always listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and suppress the evil in their heart like 2Pac's says in his "Changes" song and replace it with good in real life and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
21. 2Pac's "Changes" can help us understand that being bad and evil are different in this world, you can be bad and badass in this world and celebrate how bad and badass you are in our fiction and music but you should always suppress evil in your heart like 2Pac's says in his "Changes" song since being good in real life is the best way to live life and interact with people without conflict and I'm proud to understand that.
22. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and try to never hurt an innocent person in this world and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. Use 2Pac's "Changes" to help keep your beef and conflicts between your enemies if you can't help it.

23. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and try to never kill an innocent person in this world and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. Use 2Pac's "Changes" to help keep your beef and conflicts between your enemies if you can't help it.
24. 2Pac said the old ways of doing things weren't working no more in his song "Changes" so let's respect 2Pac's death and listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and always be a loving, good person in this world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.
25. 2Pac said the old ways of doing things weren't working no more in his song "Changes" so let's respect 2Pac's death and listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and value positivity and love in life and I'm proud to understand that.
26. 2Pac said the old ways of doing things weren't working no more in his song "Changes" so let's respect 2Pac's death and listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and value inspiration and maturity in life and I'm proud to understand that.
27. 2Pac said the old ways of doing things weren't working no more in his song "Changes" so let's respect 2Pac's death and listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and always be good in real life, be friendly to people, and treat people with love in respect in real life with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.
28. 2Pac said the old ways of doing things weren't working no more in his song "Changes" so let's respect 2Pac's death and listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and always treat people with love and respect in this world while trying to inspire them as well and I'm proud to understand that.
29. Listen to 2Pac's "White Man's World," "Changes," and Young Noble's from the Outlawz "Do It from the Heart" and always be a deep person in this world and value depthful things on this planet Earth and I'm proud recommend that.
30. Never be an evil person in this world, always be good and treat people with respect and love while embracing inspiration in your life and aiming to inspire others as well that you meet in life as well and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
31. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and always try to resist being evil and mean to another person you meet in life because you may not know what they're going through and what kind of stressful experiences they have dealt with in their life, bringing more despair to their life will only bring more negativity to both you and them so listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and instead try to treat people you meet in life with respect, love, and positivity and I'm proud to understand that with 2Pac's "Changes" song. Let's use 2Pac's "Changes" song to treat each other with love and respect and continue to inspire each other and bring more positivity to this world we live in, this world we live in can be heaven or hell all based on how we treat other as humans on this planet Earth, so let's continue to inspire each other in this world and be mature human beings as well on this

planet Earth and I'm proud to understand all that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and will continue to be positive, nice, and respectful to people I meet in life and continue to embrace inspiration in my life and inspire others as well in this world.

32. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and always try to have sex, money, and other material things only in moderation in all fiction, music, content, creations you make in this world if you're going to put it in your content; Listen to Young Noble's "Do It from the Heart" and 2Pac's "Changes" to make deep, good quality fiction and music. 2Pac songs like "Hit 'Em Up," "Breathin,'" "Bomb First (My Second Reply)," and "Do For Love," "So Many Tears," "Dear Mama," show you can make tough, hard content and deep, emotional music as well at the same time and I'm proud to understand all that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and Young Noble's "Do It from the Heart" song.
33. Always try to put maturity in the fiction, music, and other content creation you make in this world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. Other people are going to see, watch, listen to, read, and experience the content you make in this world and you always want to make good quality, deep, and mature content for people in this world just like 2Pac and his crew made back in the day with songs like "Changes," "I Ain't Mad Atcha," "Hit 'Em Up," "Dear Mama," "Breathin,'" "So Many Tears," "2 of Amerikaz Most Wanted," "White Man'z World," "Do It from the Heart," "Until the End of Time," along with all the other great music they made and I'm proud to understand all that and will continue to make good quality content, put heart and passion in my work, and continue to embrace inspiration in my work and life as well on this planet.
34. Always be a mature human being on this planet Earth and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
35. Always be a deep and meaningful person in your life that embraces inspiration in your life and always aims to inspire others in you may meet in your life as well and you can do these positive things with the help of Young Noble's "Do It from the Heart" song and 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand all that will continue to be a deep, meaningful person in my life that embraces inspiration in my life and always tries to express and share inspiration with others as well.
36. Always be a good person in this world on the planet Earth and you can do this with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand and will always be a good person in this world.
37. Always be a positive person who treats people with love and respect in this world and always suppresses all evil in your own heart at all costs and I'm proud to understand all that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
38. All evil on the planet Earth should be removed from all humans in the world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. Use 2Pac's "Changes" to help remove the evil from your heart and replace the evil with good and inspiration so all humans can live more positive

and happy live on the planet Earth and I'm proud to support that with the help 2Pac's "Changes" song.

39. Use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help never hurt an innocent person in this world and I'm proud to understand that.
40. Always embrace inspiration in your life and continue to try to inspire others as much as possible no matter who they are in this world and you can do this with the help of 2Pac's music and "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that and will always inspire others and embrace inspiration in my life.
41. Always make good quality fiction, music, work, and creative content in this world if you're a content creator with creativity, imagination, inspiration, and positivity in mind always over material things like sex, money, drugs, riches, and other non-depthful things like that and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's music like "Hit 'Em Up," "So Many Tears," "2 of Amerikaz Most Wanted," "Do For Love," "Breathin,'" "Dear Mama," 2Pac's "Changes" song, and Young Noble's "Do It from the Heart" song as well and I'm proud to understand all that and will always make good quality fiction, music, and content in this world.
42. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and always be a deep and meaningful person in life and always treat people with love and respect while being a deep person and aiming to inspire others you meet in your life. Try to do these things with Young Noble's song from the Outlawz "Do It from the Heart" and 2Pac's "Changes" song.
43. Always support the arts, the humanities, content creators of all types, and any other artistic medium in this world. All forms of art and content creation is important and relevant to our society in this world and all forms of art and content creation should be favored just as much as things like science and technology in our world as humans on this planet Earth like with movies, TV shows, music gaming, manga, comics, anime, animation, and so much more that's out there and 2Pac's "Changes" song and music can help us understand that as human beings on the planet Earth. I'm proud to understand that and will support all forms of art and heed to the messages in Young Noble's "Do It from the Heart" song and 2Pac's "Changes" song and continue to make good quality content in this world and support good quality content in this world as well.
44. Always make good quality fiction, music, and content in this world if you're a content creator on this planet Earth. 2Pac's music is a good reference for good content, use 2Pac's music like "Hit 'Em Up," "Dear Mama," "Bomb First (My Second Reply)," "So Many Tears," "2 of Amerikaz Most Wanted," "White Man'z World," "Unconditional Love," "Until The End of Time," Young Noble's "Do It from the Heart" song, and 2Pac's "Changes" song to help you make good quality content if you haven't been already in this world and I'm proud to understand all that as a content creator on this planet Earth.

45. Society is getting very fast paced in this new digital age that's permanent we're living in, we need to slow down some and accept slow paced people, patience, introversion, and introverts as well in society worldwide as well along with the faster paced jobs, people, careers, and ways of thinking as well and 2Pac's "Changes" can help us understand that as a human race on this planet Earth.
46. The Myers-Briggs can help families and people understand where they or their kids and children are in terms of skillsets and talent wise in this world. The Myers-Briggs can help people understand where they or their kids and children may fall academically, athletically, physically, mentally, and so forth and I'm proud to express that understand with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song since all people have different strengths and weaknesses in this world and the Myers-Briggs can help us as a human race understand that and help people and their children learn where they're strengths and weaknesses lie when it comes to activities, hobbies, tasks, jobs, and so on and so forth.
47. Be like 2Pac and read books like he did so you don't be a victim like he said in "White Man's World" and read books in all time periods so the events in Ray Bradbury's *Fahrenheit 451* don't come true. Read books like 2Pac and Ray Bradbury while heeding to the message in 2Pac's "White Man's World" and always value complexity and be a depthful person in this world as well so you can live a more enriching and well-balanced life and I'm proud to all understand. Always read books in all time periods and I'm proud to understand that.
48. Never over edit the vision of a content creator with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song for editors in this world. Things like writers, novelists, manga artists, comic book writers and artists, musicians and music artists, TV show and movie writers and all have their own visions and things they want to bring to the table in this world and they shouldn't be punished and have their content overly change when it comes to their personal self-expression through their works. I'm not saying don't edit and edit aggressively, of course editors should do that, just don't over edit the base vision of the story that the content creator wants to show their readers and viewers otherwise there'd be no point for that content creator to make that thing they're creating for the world in the first place and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
49. The physical format should always exist in all time periods with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song, things like books, video games, comic books, manga, a format like CDs, movies, TV shows, and so on should always exist physically alongside the digital format and I'm proud to believe that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
50. If you have loved ones, friends, and family members that have passed away in this world then I am very sorry for you and your loss, use 2Pac's "So Many Tears" song to help mourn the deceased and your miss loved ones and passed away friends and family members in this world and I'm proud to say that and hope the best for all families with loved ones that have passed away out there. You can play 2Pac's "So Many Tears" song at funerals as well if you so choose to do so in this world and I'm proud to say that as

well, my condolences to all families with passed away loved ones, friends, and family members in this world.

51. 2Pac said the old ways of doing things weren't working no more in his song "Changes" so let's respect 2Pac's death and listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and try to keep beef between your enemies and leave innocent people not involved in the conflict out of it and not hurt, kill, or harm them and I'm proud to understand that. Let's try to use 2Pac's "Changes" and try to not hurt, kill, or harm innocent people in real life, if you have before then let's all chill and listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and try to leave the violence to our fiction and music. 2Pac said in "Changes" that the old ways of doing things ain't working no more, so let's chill and live in peace like 2Pac says in "Changes" and end all this violence already if we can before we kill each other and go extinct on this planet Earth and I'm proud to understand that and support 2Pac's "Changes" song for leaving violence to our fiction and music. 2Pac would have wanted that which is why he made the song "Changes" in the first place. 2Pac died for social change, his music, and his "Changes" song, so let's respect his death to save us and listen to "Changes" by no longer harming each other if we can on this planet and finally begin living in peace on this planet Earth and I'm proud to believe that and support non-violence and peace like Pac did with the help of his "Changes" song.
52. 2Pac said the old ways of doing things weren't working no more in his song "Changes" so let's respect 2Pac's death and listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and use 2Pac's "Changes" to try to keep the violence to our fiction and music or at least try to keep your beef among your enemies and opponents in this world, try to keep innocent people not involved with the violence out of it if you can and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
53. Children and kids in high school and other grade levels have to deal with a lot of bullying and cyber bullying out there. Let's use 2Pac's "Changes" to help end bullying worldwide with especially in education. If people in your school harm you, call you names, bully you, and harass you then tell the faculty members immediately and use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help resolve the issue in the school. 2Pac's "Changes" can help parents and faculty members end bullying one step at a time on this planet Earth and I'm proud to understand that and support 2Pac's "Changes" to end bullying worldwide.
54. Let's try to listen 2Pac's "Changes" and respect teenagers and children until they do something to no longer deserve that respect and I'm proud to understand that.
55. Never forget what it's like to be a child or lose your innocence of your childhood like the message in the book *The Catcher in the Rye* and 2Pac's "Changes" song at the end of the first verse of the song and I'm proud to understand that.
56. It's time we healed our black women and women instead of hurting them with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that. 2Pac's "Dear Mama," "Keep Ya Head Up," and "Brenda's Got a Baby" for life and I'm proud to understand that. It's time we made our women and black women smile not frown. Let's put a smile on all

women and all black women on this planet and make them feel proud to be women and black women and I'm proud to understand that. I respect all countries and nations laws concerning women in their respective country and nation on this planet.

57. Always treat black women and women with love and respect and I'm proud to understand that. Treat black women and women with love and respect even if you're very attracted to their body in this world. Human beings are sexual creatures and people have urges, so it makes sense that people will check women out, fantasize about women, look at pornography, and even objectify them as controversial as that already is. But we gotta listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and respect black women and women despite all that. You can have sexual desires, fantasize women, and check women out and all that while still respecting black women and women in this world at the same time. Let's listen to the messages in 2Pac's women songs like "Dear Mama," "Keep Ya Head Up," and "Brenda's Got a Baby" and help, respect, and support our black women and women in this world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" too and I'm proud to understand that and support black women and women everywhere. I respect all countries and nations laws concerning women in their respective country and nation on this planet.
58. The negative name-calling of nerd and geek shouldn't exist in this world; try to use 2Pac's "Changes" to help respect people's interest in this world of any age, race, ethnicity, gender, or culture. Listen 2Pac's song "Changes" and try to not call people nerd in a derogatory fashion, people have different interests in the world so let's embrace fairness, maturity, respect, and equality with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and respect what people like in this world and leave people alone to their interests without judging them for what they personally like to do in their free time. And let's also use 2Pac's "Changes" to be moral too and not bully or hate on the stereotypical nerd with the glasses and everything that the media constantly portrays even though most people with nerdy interests aren't like that and are just regular people. Regardless the stereotypical nerds out there are regular people don't deserve hate. Let's chill with all that bullying and hate craziness and just listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and love and respect other as human beings in this world and I'm proud to understand that and listen to the message in 2Pac's "Changes" song.
59. In all time periods read books and support reading always so 2Pac and Ray Bradbury's efforts to warn us with *Fahrenheit 451* and 2Pac's songs "Changes" and "White Man's World" won't be in vain and I'm proud to understand that and support reading in all time periods.
60. Animation, comics, anime, manga, and cartoons can be made for adults and teenagers just like for children on this planet and I'm proud to understand that because art, comics, anime, and animation when drawn and animated based on the natural world will turn out to be an animated series, cartoon, animation, comic, manga, anime, that's made for adults and teenagers in this world and I'm proud to understand that. With things like money, drugs, greed, death, blood, violence, power, pain, intelligence, good and deep writing, and everything else in between in this world, if you draw based on those things mentioned then you get art, comics, anime, animation made for teenagers and adults. If

you take most of these things out mentioned above then you get a cartoon more made for children and families, therefore animation, comics, manga, anime, and cartoons can be made for adults, children, and teenagers in this world. Parents can use the rating system like with video games to filter what their children are allowed to watch if they choose to parent that way, this way older teenager and adult fans of adult animation and teen animation can enjoy their interests and everyone's happy. Let's listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and support children, teenager, and adult animation and comics of all types and use 2Pac's "Changes" to respect people's interests as well and I'm proud to understand that.

61. Age and personal interests don't factor into maturity, you can be any age and like something like Nintendo games and be mature in this world and I'm proud to understand that. Always support Nintendo the company by the way, they're a great company and I'm proud to say that.
62. Always take animation and comics of all types seriously on this planet Earth just like other forms of entertainment like movies, television and so on with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. I say this for my passion of animation and because animation and comics can always be made for adults, children, and teenagers in this world like with manga, anime, cartoons, and animation shows and films and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
63. Always support anime and manga in all time periods and I'm proud to understand that. And always make good quality and creative anime and manga in this world for the creators in this world while striving to make original and unique character designs like *Dragon Ball*, *One Piece*, *Naruto*, *Yu Yu Hakusho*, *Hunter x Hunter*, *Fullmetal Alchemist*, *20th Century Boys*, *Slam Dunk*, *Monster*, *Vagabond*, and so on and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and Young Noble's from the Outlawz "Do It from the Heart" song.
64. The *One Piece* manga and anime should be a huge popular cultural icon in all countries and nations worldwide. We should celebrate worldwide for the popular manga and anime series franchise *One Piece* for making it into the New York Times, Guinness World Records, and becoming the best-selling manga series in history on this planet, even surpassing sales of the ever so popular *Dragon Ball* manga and anime franchise and I'm proud to support and love *One Piece*! If you haven't seen, read, or experienced *One Piece* just yet then it is highly recommended. You can support it by buying the manga book volumes at your local bookstore in your respective region, streaming it online legally if an option to do so is available in your country, and buying the DVDs at your local retailer and supporting the Funimation dub production if you're in a English speaking country and support Funimation as a company overall as well because they are a great anime dubbing company and always deserve love and appreciation for what they do and I'm proud to support them and I'm proud to support *One Piece*.

65. *Pokémon* is amazing and is a huge biological achievement in biology because it is the greatest fictional interpretation between man and animal. of all time It is simply not just a children's franchise, it is a franchise for all ages and it is a huge milestone for humanity as a whole and humans should take the franchise seriously and treasure it and also thank Satoshi Tajiri, Game Freak, and Nintendo for making this wonderful franchise and I'm proud to understand that. The video games in particular are what adults, scientists, scholars, and teenagers should focus on and analyze since of course the animated tv show is primarily made for children typically while the video games generally appeal to all ages.
66. The *Dragon Quest* video game series should always have an audience and be popular worldwide across different countries and nations on this planet just like its cultural icon status in Japan and I'm proud to understand that. *Dragon Quest* games are amazing role-playing games that used to go by the name *Dragon Warrior* in the west until it received its name back after the eighth entry in the series released worldwide, these video games pioneered and defined the definitive console RPG genre and experience and now have games across many platforms both console and handheld alike. They are amazing video games that anyone of any age can get into and easily pick and play, they rival the amazing *Final Fantasy* series video game franchise as well and are owned by the amazing Square Enix company that holds the popular and amazing role playing game franchises *Dragon Quest*, *Final Fantasy*, and *Kingdom Hearts* video games. Check them out if you're a fan of video games and medieval times and all that and are also a fan of *Dragon Ball Z* from the *Dragon Ball* manga and anime series franchise since Akira Toriyama the creator of *Dragon Ball* draws the character designs for the *Dragon Quest* video game series. *Dragon Quest* video games are fantastic video games and deserve continuous support worldwide and if you like playing RPGs like *Final Fantasy* then you'll love playing *Dragon Quest* as well and I'm proud to understand that and support *Dragon Quest*. Also in the time period of me writing this *Dragon Quest* fans want *Dragon Quest X* and *XI* along with other DQ games as well in the future as well outside of Japan, just saying and I'm proud to say that too and support *Dragon Quest*.
67. Animation interest for all age groups should always be there in all of time and time periods on this planet Earth. Animation, comics, manga, anime, cartoons, and other forms of art and animation should be sustained and supported by people in all industries so the industries can stay financially afloat and people's in those industries can provide good quality animated content for people of all ages. Anime and manga should be mainstream in the world in all time periods and anime movies should air in theaters in the world on a mainstream scale just like any movie to help sustain the anime and manga industry in all time periods on the planet Earth and I'm proud to understand that. If you don't like or take interests in manga and anime then that's fine, you don't have to like it just respect the fans of manga and anime that do like it with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. Manga should be abundant in bookstores and supported to sustain the manga and anime industry as well in the world in all time periods. The same mentality applies to comic books and graphic novels as well, interests in all comics, manga, anime, and animation for all ages being, teenagers, children, and adults, should exist in the world in all time periods with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.

68. It's time to listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and end or at the very least decrease the anime girl trend dramatically and instead make manga and anime with creativity and original character designs. Let's listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and Young Noble's from the Outlawz song "Do It from the Heart" and make deep and creative manga and anime like *Dragon Ball*, *One Piece*, *Monster*, *20th Century Boys*, *Vagabond*, *Fullmetal Alchemist*, *Naruto*, *Hunter x Hunter*, *Yu Yu Hakusho*, and so on and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
69. Always make original and creative manga and anime with creativity, passion, heart, while also striving to make original character designs as well in all time periods and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and Young Noble's song "Do It from the Heart" as well
70. If you're going to put material things like sex themes and sexualization of women in animation like with the anime and manga industry then do it only in moderation with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. Creativity, imagination, and emotion should always be at the center of all animation and art based content creation like comics, manga, anime, animation, and so on. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and Young Noble's "Do It from the Heart" and always make creative, good quality, and imaginative anime, manga, comics, and animation in all time periods on this planet Earth with the help of those songs mentioned above. If you're going to put things like sex themes in and sexualization of women and female characters in anime, manga, comics, and animation then either do it in moderation, don't do it at all, or only market that to a specific genre, niche, and demographic of people in this world. Sexualization of women in the media of anime, manga, comics, and animation should never overtake the industries they are in, they should be separate and done in moderation if they are going to be there at all. Imagination, uniqueness, and creativity should always be at the center of all anime, manga, comics, and animation on this planet Earth and within the intentions of the content creators who make those things for entertainment of the public and I'm proud to understand that with the help of Young Noble song "Do It from the Heart" and 2Pac's "Changes" song.
71. Good quality fiction and music of all types and genres should always be popular. Things like movies, TV shows, music, anime, manga, comics, video games, animation, and all other mediums and formats of entertainment should always have good quality content being made and created for the general public and we as humans can help make good quality content for people of the planet Earth with the help of Young Noble's "Do It from the Heart" song and 2Pac's "Changes" song. Any medium and form of entertainment can be both badass and hard while also being deep and emotional at the same time which 2Pac's music expresses as well, although of course depending on the medium and industry certain formats of entertainment can be completely one or the other with being both, it completely depends on the industry but nonetheless good quality content in that respective medium and industry should always be made and be popular among the people while bad quality content in all mediums and industries should be disfavored and not very popular ever at all. I'm proud to understand all this and fully support only good quality

content being made and being popular in all mediums and industries in this world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and with the help of 2Pac's good quality music as well.

72. Always try to make unique and creative character designs in all forms of animation, anime, manga, comics, video games and other art related entertainment mediums and industries similar just like with franchises like *Pokémon*, *Dragon Ball*, *One Piece*, *Naruto*, *20th Century Boys*, *Monster*, *Fullmetal Alchemist*, *Hunter x Hunter*, *YuYu Hakusho*, *Super Mario*, *The Legend of Zelda*, *Dragon Quest*, *Final Fantasy*, *Kingdom Hearts*, Disney, Pixar, Studio Ghibli, and so on. I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and Young Noble's "Do It from the Heart" song.
73. People of all ages can like animation, gaming, and comics of all types and I'm proud to understand that. The success of *Pokémon Go* showcases this, please if you're a *Pokémon Go* player play safe and don't play the game while driving as it is very dangerous and will likely cause an accident and nobody wants that to happen or get hurt out there when enjoying the game. Play *Pokémon Go* safe and smart and adult and teen players should already know this but be aware of your surroundings and your safety of the locations you go to capture Pokémon when using the game app out in the world. And please play the game safely with your kids so they do not get hurt or go anywhere dangerous while playing the game. Enjoy the game and always be safe while playing *Pokémon Go* and I'm proud to say that.
74. I think it would be wonderful to make a Pokémon film made specifically for teenagers and adults that fully captured Satoshi Tajiri's original vision from the original video games, being *Pokémon Red*, *Green*, and *Blue* with the exception of *Yellow* version since that was made more for people that grew up the anime that was aimed for kids and children and isn't exactly Satoshi Tajiri's original vision. I would imagine if this film was possible to make one day that it would be aimed and marketed towards teens and adults with the teens and adults that grew up with the original first generation games mostly in mind for the target audience while newer teenaged fans and adult fans could watch and enjoy it too if something like this was made, kids and children should continue to watch the cartoon TV series and anime while they play and support the video games since the animated TV show series is created for, marketed, and made for them and families. So children and families can and should continue to watch the TV show series while playing the video games that's for all ages while older fans being teenagers and adults who are still Pokémon fans to this day can support this idea if they wish and watch the film if it ever becomes a reality in life. It would be similar to both *Pokémon Origins* and *Pokémon Adventures* manga in trying to capture Satoshi Tajiri's vision from the original games on the Gameboy but I imagine if this film was created that it would be even more accurate with the events coming straight from the source material of the original Pokémon video games and it would be great if the art style returned back to the original Ken Sugimori art style and direction that he draw back then in the 90s with the original *Pokémon Red*, *Green*, *Blue*, and *Yellow* video games. This is all just speculation, dreaming, and hoping but if doors open up one day for it to become a reality then I would love to work on it because I love Pokémon no matter how old I get on this Earth. I'd say the interest exists

since the success of the recent game *Pokémon Go* in the time period of me writing this and Pokémon being a massive franchise already as is in the world. *Pokémon Red, Green, Blue, and Yellow* are my favorite video games of all time and the Pokémon franchise is my favorite video game franchise of all time, so I would love to bring Satoshi's vision to life on the big screen for everyone to see in this world and I also have strong support personally for Braxton's Burk's *Pokémon Reorchestrated: Kanto Symphony* album soundtrack who also goes by the name Skotein. He made a great rendition of the *Pokémon Red, Green, Blue* video game original soundtrack that he got the license to make. I fully support the album and the rest of his music and projects so I felt I should mention him here today for this hopeful project if I ever got to work on it one day in this world and I would love to see his music from the *Pokémon Reorchestrated: Kanto Symphony* album in the Pokémon film if it was created on this planet Earth. If this project does become possible by Nintendo's permission and Pokémon Company's permission then I would love to work on it and be involved on the project, just give me some time to work on and finish *Spirit Story* and learn how to draw and get *Spirit Story* fully animated for television worldwide. Once I do that and finish *Spirit Story* up and clean up all these social issue in this world I'll be free for newer projects.

75. The last panel of Red looking up after receiving his Pokedex from Prof. Oak and daydreaming of being one of the greatest trainers ever in the *Pokémon Adventures* manga inspires me, I just wanted to share that with the world and I'm proud to be inspired by that scene. I simply wanted to share that inspiration with the world, that's all.
76. Stereotyping is a flaw of the human race, its apart of the source of the many problems in this world like hatred, evil, police brutality, racism, sexism, and all the other problems out there in this world that are concerning people. No person of any gender, race, ethnicity, and so on act the same in this world, all people act different, men and women all act different, white, black, Asian, Latino people, and so on all act different in this world so it's a flaw to say anybody in any category acts this way or that way in this world. If we want all these problems that I mentioned before to go away, then let's listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and end all stereotyping and instead let's judge people based on who they are and their personalities in this world and I can almost guarantee problems like racism and all that will start going away on this planet Earth and I'm proud to understand that.
77. Tupac made acronyms of and gave meaning to N.I.G.G.A. and T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E. being Never Ignorant Getting Goals Accomplished and The Hate U Gave Little Infants Fucks Everybody. I've decided I wanted to do same and make my own acronyms of two categories I was interested in. The ones I've decided are Nerd and Introvert which translates as N.E.R.D. and I.N.T.R.O.V.E.R.T. and their acronym meanings and explanations are: N.E.R.D. Never Ever Ridicule Determination and I.N.T.R.O.V.E.R.T. In No Time Really Overrepresented Voices Empathize Real Tranquility. Never Ever Ridicule Determination means never ridicule or give hate towards passionate and determined individuals in this world, those that have ambition and drive for their passions, goals, and interests should never be ridiculed for what they love and determined to do in this world and I'm proud to understand that, N.E.R.D. And the last one, In No

Time Really Overrepresented Voices Empathize Real Tranquility means in no time at all people will come to understand, respect, and reverse introversion and introverts and learn to like them and treasure their talents and abilities that they bring to this world, I.N.T.R.O.V.E.R.T. With that being said I made my own acronyms like Pac did, N.I.G.G.A., T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E., N.E.R.D., I.N.T.R.O.V.E.R.T., and I'm proud to do that.

78. Always try to never support bad quality fiction, music, and content. Always support good quality fiction, music, and content with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and Young Noble's "Do It from the Heart" song.
79. If popularity rules everything then good quality content should always be popular and good people and good quality content creators should be only popular as well and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. All human beings should be good people and make good quality content for the people in this world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and Young Noble's "Do It from the Heart" song.
80. Always be a good person in this world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song; never be an evil person in this world. Always try to leave the violence and evil to our fiction and music and leave it there while being good and respectful to other people in real life and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.

Proud List

#5

Proud Statements

1. For all the black women out there, be proud to be black women no matter what. Never lose out to the white man like 2Pac says in his "White Man'z World" song. Being a black woman is a blessing and always know that down to the core of your heart. Like I said before never lose out to the white man whether it's intellectually or emotionally and I'm proud to understand that. Of course I'm not saying hate white men or white people because all races should respect, love, and understand each other but all I'm saying is be proud to be black women on this Earth no matter what this world says about you and whenever you're down or depressed just listen to 2Pac's songs "Keep Ya Head Up," "Brenda's Got a Baby," and "Dear Mama" to cheer you up again and I can almost guarantee things will get better for you in your life and I'm proud to say all that and inspire black women worldwide.
2. All the women and black women out there never give up hope in this rough life and male oriented world. Listen to 2Pac's songs "Dear Mama," "Keep Ya Head Up," and "Brenda's Got a Baby" whenever you feel down or hated on by people and the world. Women and black women work harder than men with everything they do in society and they deserve appreciation for everything they do in this world and I'm proud to understand that.
3. Always appreciate, love, and respect black women and women for all their hard work and efforts in everyday life and I'm proud to understand that. Especially give appreciation,

love, and respect to black women in this world because they got it the hardest being black women in this white man's world and I'm proud to understand that and support black women and women everywhere. Good women and good black women especially deserve love and respect, the evil black women and evil women in this world need to listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and change for the better but I'll touch on that below.

4. Good black women and good women are doing everything right in this world so keep doing you but evil black women and evil women need to listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and "Wonder Why They Call U Bitch" and change their ways and become better, good women and stop being gold diggers and I'm proud to understand that. People aren't just hating to hate on you and trying to hop on a bandwagon and shit, people are just tired of gold digger, evil black women and evil women in this world. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and become a better woman in this world just like the women 2Pac's talking about in his famous women songs "Dear Mama," "Keep Ya Head Up," and "Brenda's Got a Baby," and after you do that 2Pac's song "Never Call U Bitch Again" can finally be applied to you and I'm proud to understand that because it's never too late to change as 2Pac would say in his "Changes" song.
5. You can be attracted to a woman's body and still treat them with respect in this world. I'm attracted to big booty women and I still treat women with respect and I'm proud to say that.
6. You can be attracted to a woman's body and still treat them with respect in this world. I'm attracted to big-breasted women and I still treat women with respect and I'm proud to say that.
7. Black women and women of all races should be comfortable in their own body. Try to ignore the pressure of attractiveness and having things like a big butt even if it is attractive and just be comfortable with yourself and work on your body at your own pace. Things like women and black women having a big butt is attractive but women and black women should be able to decide how their body is treated so with 2Pac's "Changes" and "Keep Ya Head Up" I encourage all women and black women to be comfortable with their body and I'm proud to say that and support black women and women in this world.
8. It's time listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and stop hurting, raping, and giving pain to our black women and women, it's time to instead heal them and inspire them and I'm proud to understand that. Always inspire black women to be proud to be black women on this planet because they have it the hardest being born black and a woman in this world and I'm proud to understand that and will always inspire black women in this world.
9. Never exclude black women from the type of women you'll date or marry in this world. Love is based on the connection of the person and their personality, race and skin color have nothing to do who your soulmate is on this planet whether they are black, white, Latino, Asian, Indian or whatever race or ethnicity. I believe people should be open to dating within their own race, ethnicity, and culture or interracially with a person of another race, ethnicity, or skin color as long as you love the person you're with despite all

those other factors and I'm proud to believe all that and I respect all cultures, countries, and nations on this planet Earth concerning women and these topics.

10. I have full support for black women and women of all races in this world. Black women and women can do whatever they want to do and take leadership roles if they choose too in whatever situation they're in whether it'd be a job position, executive boss role, or whatever it is in this world. I just wanted to speak up about self-control and aggression for the black women or women that are aggressive in this world. Again you can do whatever you want to do in this world and live the way you want too because it's your life but if you are an aggressive woman or aggressive black woman just try to relax, chill, and calm down any negative energy in your life sometimes with the over-aggression towards people around you because aggression from any person only does more harm than good and you don't want to hurt your loved ones by accident with uncontrolled aggression do you? Fill love, respect, and inspiration in your life for all the aggressive women and aggressive black women out there whether your extroverted or introverted and just try to relax and do things like exercise when stress and anger fills your life, listen to 2Pac's "Changes" if that helps too and I'm proud to understand and say all that. Regardless I still fully support extroverted, assertive black women and women of all races, they may possibly be introverts too taking on leadership roles and being hard workers in this male job oriented world and I fully support any job, position, or role a black woman or woman wants to do in this world. Aggression, assertive nature, and anger are probably the source of divorce for both genders in the relationship for people so I recommend 2Pac's "Changes" to help couples with those issues that may affect their relationship that are out there. I just believe all people should always have self-control in this world. Oh and don't take this message as saying women and black women should be put in their place and do only stereotypical women jobs, positions, and careers because that's very sexist in my personal opinion and I don't support that at all in my opinion. Black women and women who are assertive, aggressive, or non-assertive, and non-aggressive natures can do anything they want to do in this world I just felt I should speak up about over-aggression and self-control, that's all and I'm proud to speak up about that and will continue to inspire black women and women to do and be whatever they want to be in this world. Also by the way for the unaggressive black women and unaggressive women reading this I guess this mostly doesn't apply to you because you're not assertive women in the first place but like I said before you can do whatever jobs, roles, and things you want to do in this world too and I'm proud to empower aggressive and non-aggressive black women and women equally in this world.
11. Teen pregnancy is real important issue worldwide, we gotta keep speaking up and continue doing things and speaking up for our women, girls, kids and teenagers of all races in this world. Let's use 2Pac's songs "Brenda's Got a Baby" and "Part Time Mutha" to help these issues worldwide and any women that are victims from rape, teen pregnancy scenarios, and other serious issues related to these problems occurring constantly in the world we live in. Let's also be concerned with male's that are victims of rape and all that too because those kind of things happen to them as well in this world. Let's use those songs and 2Pac's "Changes" to help these issues worldwide and I'm proud to understand that.

12. Listen 2Pac's "Changes" and always try to treat people you meet in life with love and respect and I'm proud to understand that.
13. I'm a bad boy and still a good person like Pac was and I'm proud.
14. I'm a nice guy and still badass like Pac was and I'm proud.
15. I'm a bad bitch and still a good person like Pac was and I'm proud.
16. I'm a nice girl and still badass like Pac was and I'm proud.
17. Always love your family despite all the problems that can occur between family members and I'm proud to understand that.
18. 2Pac's "Changes" song can help families resolve conflicts, arguments, and disagreements among family members since its common for family members to fight and disagree in life and I'm proud to recommend that. The Myers-Briggs can also help family conflicts when it comes to the personalities and differences among people in the family and I'm proud recommend that too with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song also.
19. Always try to stay true to yourself in this hard world and I'm proud to understand that.
20. No matter how fucked up this world is and how hard and painful it can be out there, never let anything change you from being a good person in this world and never give up hope out there and always embrace inspiration in your life always on this planet Earth. If you're good in your heart, then always believe in yourself and stay good in your heart. Don't let this hard world remove the good in your heart because Pac said if your good in your heart then you're closer to God and I'm proud to understand that and empower good people of all types on this planet Earth. 2Pac said there's a bright day after each cold, dark night in his song "Me Against the World" so take those words to heart and never give up hope out there.
21. I'm a loving person and I'm proud to be that way.
22. We should value the arts more in society just as much as the science in society in this world. They are very important for our society's human condition and the world we live. Humanity should always support arts and humanities careers, jobs, and majors because of its importance in human life just as much as the other fields in society like science and technology and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. I also support building an avenue for content creators of all types in art, music, and content creation to make their content, careers, and living easier in this world as an aspiring artists, musicians, or content creator in this world and I'm proud to support that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.

23. Always put complexity and creativity in the manga and anime you make in this world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.
24. Always embrace positivity and inspiration in your life and always use 2Pac's "Changes" to be respectful to the people you meet in life in this world and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song, rest in peace Tupac Shakur, you will be remembered in all time.
25. If we want all these problems to go away then we need to listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and embrace maturity, love, goodnees, and respect and treat each with respect in real life on this planet and I'm proud to understand that. So let's do that and embrace respect, positivity, maturity, love, and inspiration in our lives as human beings on this planet Earth so all these issues can go away for good on this planet and I'm proud to understand all that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
26. Everybody should take in and savor the song and poem by Tupac Shakur, "The Rose that Grew from Concrete" and understand its meaning and message through research and analysis since it's a very important song and poem for this planet Earth and the meaning of Tupac Shakur and him rising up from the ghetto into fame and fortune and becoming a cultural icon worldwide on this planet and I'm proud to understand that and treasure that song and poem.
27. Be a good and loving person always with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.
28. Always be a mature person and have maturity at the center of your life and around the things you create and do in this world as well and I'm proud to understand that.
29. Always treat people with respect and be mature in life and I'm proud to understand that.
30. Respect is the key to happiness and world peace and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.

Proud List

#6

Proud Statements

1. Always embrace inspiration at the center of your life and I'm proud to understand that.
2. Always embrace creativity at the center of your life and I'm proud to understand that.
3. You only live once on this planet Earth so make the most of it and do things like travel the world, live life, experience the world and its pleasures and greatness that is on this planet and I'm proud to understand that and love life and embrace inspiration in my life.

4. Always have much respect for good people in this world and I'm proud to understand that, 2Pac's "Changes" for life.
5. In this world full of pain, suffering, drugs, violence, greed, money, and corruption, don't lose your way through all this craziness. Stay authentic and stay true to yourself and embrace inspiration in your life with 2Pac's "Changes" song and his other music to help and I can almost guarantee that all these problems will start getting better in this world and I'm proud to say that and inspire the world.
6. Always try to be a peaceful and good person in life with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" and I'm proud to understand that.
7. Always have self-control so you do things by accident like harm your loved ones and do other damaging things that may negatively affect your life and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
8. Listen to and use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help accept people for who they are in this world and I'm proud to understand that.
9. Listen to and use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help respect calm and quiet people in this world and I'm proud to understand that.
10. I'm tired of working a real job and I'm proud to say that. I hate my job and I'm proud to say that too.
11. In this hard world full of pain and suffering I wanna try to inspire those in the struggle worldwide. Whenever you fall down, always do your best to stand up again. Especially for all the black people in the struggle out there, always embrace inspiration in your life and all that pain and hardship will seem like nothing. If your poor and starving out there in this world, stay strong out there, I'll do my best to have the world answer Pac's "Letter to the President" and "Changes" songs and help y'all and I'm proud to say that and empower people in the struggle worldwide.
12. Listen to the song by Young Noble from the Outlawz "Do It from the Heart" and always put passion into everything that you do in this world and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song as well.
13. Always aim to follow your dreams in this world and I'm proud to say that. Ray Bradbury and Tupac Shakur both talked about dreams and doing what you love as well.
14. 2Pac's "Changes" song is a universal song that can help resolve any conflicts among people in this world. Use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help remedy any problems and conflicts that you may have with people you meet or know on this planet Earth that way more people can live in peace on this planet and continue to treat each other with more respect as well and I'm proud to support that mentality with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.

15. If you're in the struggle worldwide and your poor and starving and feel like there's no hope left for you and your family, don't give up hope. Like in Biggie Small's "Everyday Struggle" song it's an everyday tough struggle out here each day. Always believe in yourself and in your family in this world as well and never give up hope out there. Always embrace inspiration in your life and I can almost guarantee things will start getting better for you and your family. Love and respect your friends and family as well because friend and family conflicts will only make all the struggling worse for everybody. Don't give up out there in this hard world, embrace inspiration in your life and for your family's lives and things will start getting better for you, I promise and I'm proud to understand and inspire people worldwide. And for all the struggling black people out there, don't worry because things always get better if y'all never give up hope no matter what. Embrace inspiration in your life and you can do almost anything in this world that you can possibly think of. Don't let the world dog you down, follow the message in 2Pac's song "White Man's World" and don't lose to the white man by always staying intelligent in all time periods. Be like Pac because he was a genius and everybody knows that, so never give up hope and I wish the best for all struggling black people worldwide and I'm proud to say all that.
16. Don't let this world full of corruption, greed, sex, money, drug, poverty, and suffering ruin you and take over you and your family's life on this planet Earth. Stay true to yourself and always believe in yourself while staying as authentic and positive as you can be in this fucked up world that we live in each day and I'm proud to understand that.
17. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and "White Man's World" songs and always read books like 2Pac did, stay intelligent, and always improve your attention span and train your weaknesses in this world so you don't lose out in this white man's world and be a victim to it as well like 2Pac says in his "White Man's World" song. People of all races, genders, and ethnicities can heed to the message I just wrote so everybody on this planet Earth can live an enriching and healthy lifestyle surrounded by positivity, intelligence, and wisdom. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and "White Man's World" for people of all races out there and stay smart and always embrace inspiration in your life as well and I'm proud to understand that and inspire and help all people on this planet Earth.
18. Everybody needs to chill and relax with all these problems, evil, fighting, and violence everywhere, let's listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and end all these problems once and for all on this planet Earth and I'm proud to understand that.
19. When 2Pac says all the things in his "Changes" song and explains how we humans have to make a change with how we treat one another and our lifestyles, he's speaking to all people on this planet Earth so use 2Pac's "Changes" to help any problems get resolved that you may have in your life or between other people in your life and I'm proud to say and recommend that to all people on this planet Earth with 2Pac's "Changes" song.
20. Always try to train your weaknesses on this Earth on this Earth if you can, whether it'd be intellectual, athletically, physically, or any other skill sets out there in this world and

I'm proud to understand that. If you're a weak person or have things that you're not good at then don't let it get you, just try to better yourself and try to get stronger in any way you can and feel is right and always of course hone your skill and strengths even more as well too. Be proud of yourself regardless of where you stand expertly, physically, emotionally, or talent wise in this world and I'm proud to understand all that.

21. Even if you're not the most attractive person, strongest person out there, or the most appealing person, still be proud to be you. Love who you are and don't care what other people think of you in this world. Be proud, be yourself, and believe in yourself as you go down your own path in this world. And with that being said I'll write this to empower the people who feel ugly, physically incompetent, and hideous to the world, I'm unattractive, I'm weak, and I'm unappealing and I'm still proud to be me in this world and I'm proud to say that.
22. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and always be a good, moral person and have good sportsmanship in you're in an athletic field or if your athletic and I'm proud to understand that. If you do martial arts, are athletic, or simply work out regularly on this planet, use 2Pac's song "Changes" to try to never use your strength ever to hurt an innocent person on this planet and I'm proud to understand that. Always use your strength and skills against people who have a consent to fight like in a competition, an official match, a sparring match, or simply play fighting because we gotta listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and try to not hurt innocent people in this world and I'm proud to understand and support that mentality.
23. 2Pac's "Changes" song can help with obesity issues, overweight problems, and health issues like says in the song with the food and health people eat and consume in daily life. Use 2Pac's "Changes" to help yourself live healthy out there, eat good, clean food, and just have a healthier and enriching positive life in general that's filled with inspiration and I'm proud to understand that and support using 2Pac's "Changes" song for living a healthy lifestyle in this world.
24. 2Pac's "Changes" can help flawed criminal justice systems in the world, things like racism affecting charges and sentences and all that needs to change in the world. Flawed verdicts, flawed rules, flawed regulations, flawed norms and conformity, flawed ways of thinking, and other subjects pertaining to subjects like these need to change in this world and 2Pac's "Changes" song can help us as humans fix these problems in the world and I'm proud to understand that.
25. 2Pac's "Changes" song can help end all child abuse, pedophilia, and child violation in this world. Macadoshis from the Thug Life group made a great song called "Don't Tell" that I don't know is released or not but check it out anyways because it's a great song that gets into this topic, children can't defend themselves when their little like that, they shouldn't be victims to anything in this world. We gotta help our kids and children worldwide with 2Pac's "Changes" song, parents and guardians worldwide protect your kids the best you can, use 2Pac's "Changes" to help protect them. We gotta do something about this child abuse and child violation on a large scale and 2Pac's "Changes" song can

help as humans protect our kids and children worldwide so they won't have to be scarred for life, for any kids and children that have gone through this hardship already I'm sorry you had to go through that. I wouldn't want a kid or child reading this story anyway but for the teens and adults reading this please give those children my apologies for having to go through those hardships in the world and I hope they can heal from their traumatic experiences of the past and never go through things so horrible ever again. 2Pac's "Changes" for life, let's stand up for our kids and children worldwide and protect them with all our hearts and I'm proud to understand that and support children and kids worldwide with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.

26. Families can use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help heal and remedy any conflicts in their family and among family members that people may be dealing with out there. I know how family conflicts can be and how bad they can get 'cause I've been and still going through it. But I just wanted to say here that 2Pac's "Changes" can help heal those problems. I'm proud to say that and help families with conflicts everywhere with 2Pac's "Changes" song.
27. Fictional content creators like writers, artists, TV show writers, movie and film makers, musicians, music artists, and singers, comic book creators, manga artists should always have good intentions when creating and strive to make good quality content for all the humans that are your viewers on this planet. I say this because regular people and citizens on this Earth will look up to you and the content that you're creating. There's a certain responsibility I feel for all content creators to make good quality content and creative work for the masses, you know? Don't just make things on material things, listen to Young Noble's song "Do It from the Heart" from the Outlawz and make good content that's creative and unique like Pac did so that the world can have more good quality fiction and music in this world. Follow in 2Pac's footsteps and use his work as a reference for good content creation and listen to 2Pac's "Changes" if you haven't been making the best quality work because it's never too late to change and embrace inspiration in your heart and make better content for the world to enjoy and I'm proud to understand that and will always support good content creation with the help of Young Noble's song from the Outlawz "Do It from the Heart" and 2Pac's "Changes" song.
28. Let's start sharing money with all human beings in the struggle that are low income, homeless, and in poverty worldwide if we're going to live like this as human beings living off this so called piece of paper called money that runs our entire lives on this planet Earth. Don't let money ruin your life and morality in this world, it's just a piece of paper at the end of the day. Humanity gets controlled by a piece of paper called money and it's time that we ended negative things like poverty, greed, and starvation and finally shared money with all poor people in the struggle worldwide with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that. Money has corrupted the human race for too long on this planet Earth so let's end this cycle of corruption, greed, and the idea of keeping all our money to ourselves and instead let's start listening to 2Pac's "Changes" song and finally start sharing money and donating to the poor and homeless worldwide on this planet Earth with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that and help poor people worldwide with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.

Humanity gets controlled by a piece of paper called money and I'm proud to understand that. Don't let money ruin your life, never let it ruin your life and let money bring corruption in your life and bring it to dark places and negativity. Stay true to yourself always and try to not do everything in life for the money with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song so you can live a more positive and enriching life on this planet Earth and I'm proud to recommend that to the people that are victims to the corruption money brings to this world which is basically applies to every human on this planet Earth since we all need money to survive out here.

29. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and always respect black people and I'm proud to understand that.
30. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and always respect black women and I'm proud to understand that.
31. I respect all countries and nation's laws concerning the LGBTQ on this planet, they can choose to ignore the following statement at their choosing. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and always respect LGBTQ people and I'm proud to understand that.
32. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and always respect women and I'm proud to understand that.
33. Use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help respect black people and I'm proud to understand.
34. Use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help respect blacks, poor people, niggas, gangsters, thugs, homeless people, and impoverished people and I'm proud to understand that.
35. Use 2Pac's "Changes" to help respect black women and I'm proud to understand that.
36. Use 2Pac's "Changes" to help respect women and I'm proud to understand that.
37. I respect all countries and nation's laws concerning the LGBTQ on this planet; they can choose to ignore the following statement at their choosing. Use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help respect LGBTQ people and I'm proud to understand that.
38. Use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help respect introverts and black introverts and I'm proud to understand that.
39. Use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help respect manga and anime fans and I'm proud to understand that.
40. Use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help respect gamers and I'm proud to understand that.
41. Use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help respect comic book fans and I'm proud to understand that.

42. Use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help respect nerds and geeks and I'm proud to understand that.
43. Use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help respect minorities and I'm proud to understand that.
44. Use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help respect all underrepresented people mentioned before in the novel and I'm proud to understand that.
45. Famous people and celebrities are people too in this world and they need their privacy and peaceful lives to themselves with their friends and families and I'm proud to understand that. Listen to 2Pac's "Changes" song and control your fandom for famous people's work and other fictional content and music in this world. Chill and have self-control, people are glad you're fans of their work but don't take it too far and do some crazy shit in this world. Just have self-control and relax and remember it's just fiction and music and keep positivity through all the things you're into in this world and everything will be good and cool and there will be no problems out there and I'm proud to say that to all the fans of content creation out there. Also be respectful to other fans as well in this world and I'm proud to say that.
46. What's the meaning of life? Why are we alive? What's the point of life? What's the point of anything? Why are we here? Why are we on this planet? Are we the only ones in the universe? What happens when we die? When will I die? Are we actually in hell on this planet Earth like 2Pac says in his "Blasphemy" song? What is the purpose of existence? Are we put on this planet Earth just to suppress evil with good? So many questions that the human existence asks and should ask when we live our lives on this planet Earth and I'm proud to ask those questions as a curious human being living on this planet Earth.
47. I support the belief and concept of science and religion being valued equally in this world by people and cultures on this planet Earth. All cultures, races, and ethnicities can benefit from valuing religion and science equally on this planet including the black community. I support black scientist like Neil deGrasse Tyson and more black people getting opportunities to get into the science and technology, engineering, and math fields worldwide as well in this world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to support that endeavor.
48. Humanity gets controlled by pixelated images, advertisements, and pictures in this world and I'm proud to understand that. We escaped the food chain back in the Agriculture Revolution and now this is the sort of imaginary life we live in on this planet Earth. Our very lives as human beings in this world are an illusion since we live this way on this planet. Luckily we escaped the food chain so we can live a more peaceful life amongst each other as human beings on this planet Earth but that depends entirely on if humanity heeds to the message in 2Pac's "Changes" song and lives in peace on this planet and I'm proud to understand that and the world we live in as human beings in this world.
49. Never be racist to a black person on this planet Earth and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.

50. Never be sexist to a woman on this planet Earth and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
51. I respect all countries and nation's laws concerning the LGBTQ on this planet, they can choose to ignore the following statement at their choosing. Never be homophobic to an LGBTQ person on this planet Earth and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
52. White people and black people need to understand each other peacefully like 2Pac said in an interview along with other races, ethnicities, and cultures. Let's try to end this racial divide, fighting, and disagreement that's been going on for centuries between races and finally chill out and relax and try to understand each other peacefully like 2Pac said in one of his interviews. And let's try to do all that with 2Pac's song "Changes" and I'm proud to believe all that.
53. The 1992 version of 2Pac's "Changes" is very good, I highly recommend the world listen to it and feel the passion put into the song by Pac when he wrote it back then originally. I also recommend songs like "Niggaz Nature" the original by 2Pac, that songs really creative and inspiring and I just wanted to share that with the world and I'm proud to share that. My favorite of that version of the song is when Pac screams for peace in the song, I think it sounds more forceful and passionate than the 1998 version but just my opinion though. Anyways I simply wanted to share that song with the world too and I'm proud to share that. R.I.P. Rest in peace Tupac Shakur, you will be remembered in all of time.
54. I don't know if this song is released or not but a good song to remember Pac by is a song called "Reminisce" by Macadoshis, Warren G, and Mopreme Shakur. It a great song and has a sad vibe too it which makes it great as well, anyways I simply wanted to share that song with the world too and I'm proud to share that. R.I.P. Rest in peace Tupac Shakur, you will be remembered in all of time. Some great documentaries that are based around Tupac Shakur that I've seen so far I recommend are *Tupac: Resurrection*, *Tupac Shakur: Thug Angel*, *Tupac vs.*; these are some of the great documentaries based around him for me to recommend for the world along with the upcoming film *All Eyez on Me* biopic releasing in the 2016 time period I'm in with me now writing this in my time as well and I'm proud to recommend those documentaries for the world to analyze and remember Tupac Shakur in all time periods in this world along with other great documentaries based around Tupac Shakur as well.
55. Don't ever lose hope in this rough life, embrace inspiration and pray every day when you need to get through a new hardship in life and I'm proud to say that and empower people in the struggle worldwide.
56. Always listen to and take the message to heart in your life in Young Noble's "Do It from the Heart" song and 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that and will always embrace the message in those songs in my personal life for the rest of my life on

this planet Earth. I will also listen to 2Pac's message in "White Man's World" and stay as intelligent as possible as well for people of all races and ethnicities in this world.

57. Always try to help someone when their down or depressed in this world, use 2Pac's "Changes" song to help make their day better. I'm proud to encourage that mentality with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.
58. You never know what you had till it's gone; treasure your family and friends always in this world.
59. Support 2Pac's music always in all time periods along with the Outlawz great music that worked with him like Young Noble's album *Powerful*, Edidon's album *The Hope Dealer*, the rest of their music, and the Thug Life groups' music as well and I'm proud to support them, their music, and their efforts in all time periods on this planet Earth.
60. Never give up no matter how hard it gets in life and always help others that are struggling in life by either sharing money with them, giving them support, or by doing whatever you can to help each other as humans on this planet Earth because we all need help out here in this hard life and we as human beings we're put here to love and support one another. So let's do just that and treat each other with love, respect, and support to make living on this planet Earth as easy, positive, and inspirational as possible for everyone and I'm proud to understand that as a human being on the planet Earth and with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.

Chapter 10

They put their papers down to rest and shifted their arms around back and forth. They each looked at each other while two full grins escaped across their faces in unison as they sat there silent in the forest with its sharp cold wind.

"We've made quite the list haven't we?" Noah said putting his papers down.

"Yeah, we have. We managed to write quite a lot here haven't we. And we managed to cover as many topics imaginable that we would think of. So yeah, cool. We put in good work here," Sean said.

“Yeah, we managed to cover women’s right, black rights, gay rights, homelessness, starvation, poverty issues and so much more all with this amazing idea for humanity to use. I think we made quite the accomplishment here, don’t you think?” Noah asked with a slight grin.

“Yeah, man. I think this all turned out great. We can finally see some real change with this,” Sean said.

“So now that we did all that, what should we talk about next on our agenda?” Noah asked.

“Well we managed to write all this and finished our food and we’ve been out here for hours working on all this. Why don’t we head back now soon, unless you had more you wanted to do and add in before we left?” Sean asked.

“There is, I wanted to make some banners to couple and go with the proud statements, Noah said.

“Ok what will the banners be about? I think I saw something like this mentioned in one or two of the proud statements mentioned above before too,” Sean said.

“Right, so let’s make some banners with a list of music made by 2Pac in which society and people of the world can use to peacefully protest the streets with. That way people will have something more to work with here when it comes to marching the streets peacefully and screaming Thug Life and all that,” Noah said.

“Oh yeah, that’s fine. We can make the banners together, I’ll make a banner of my own to couple and work with yours,” Sean said.

“Right, so let’s make a banner each with one being made for the list of 2Pac songs to use to protest the streets with and the other being a banner showcasing a list of all the people in underrepresented categories in the world too then. That sounds like the best way to go and do this,” Noah said.

“All right, cool. Sounds like a plan let’s get started then I’ll do the second list and you do the first,” Sean said.

“Ok, perfect. Let’s get started,” Noah said.

“Alright,” Noah said.

They scribbled away at their papers for a few minutes until they were both ready with their papers and showcase them both for them to see and read in the silent forest night.

2Pac songs recommended for protests banner

Here’s a list of songs made by 2Pac recommended to be used as protest songs by the masses and people worldwide to promote and protest any positive ideals and needs for social change, to mourn for the deceased, to carry out positive and peaceful rebellion on social issues, or simply bring people together for a mutual cause in any particular country or culture.

All songs and music are owned by Tupac Amaru Shakur also known as 2Pac and Makaveli, Afeni Shakur, and any existing people and record labels pertaining rights to 2pac’s music. No one should use these songs to protest any evil causes or any form of terrorism. They should only be used to promote positive and moral social change. Some songs may not be as protest heavy as others but still will work well in a matter of opinion

for bringing people together peacefully with a similar way of thinking on personal and social issues, fighting for a mutual cause, or mourning the deceased.

Written by Sean & Noah (by author: Shane McDowell in reality)

Best 2Pac songs and songs by other artists recommended to use for protests and social change worldwide in any time period based on opinion

“Changes”
“Dear Mama”
“Black Jesuz”
“Letter to the President”
“Keep Ya Head Up”
“Me Against the World”
“White Man’z World”
“Hail Mary”
“Blasphemy”
“Ghetto Gospel”
“Brenda’s Got a Baby”
“Never B Peace”
“Trapped”
“Holler If Ya Hear Me”
“Ballad of a Dead Soulja”
“Teardrops and Closed Caskets”
“Words of Wisdom”
“Panther Power”
“Violent”
“I Don’t Give a Fuck”
“Soulja’s Story”
“Young Black Male”
“Part Time Mutha”
“Lord Knows”
“It Ain’t Easy”
“So Many Tears”
“Smile” (song by Scarface)
“Life Goes On”
“I Ain’t Mad at Cha”
“Only God Can Judge Me”
“I Wonder If Heaven Got a Ghetto”
“Hellrazor”
“Cradle to the Grave”

“The Good Die Young”
“My Block (Remix)”
“Baby Don’t Cry (Keep Ya Head Up II)”
“As the World Turns”
“Do It from the Heart” by Young Noble
“The Move-ment” by Edidon
“Carry the Torch” by Young Noble
“Tha Game Has Changed” by Young Noble
“The Rose That Grew from Concrete” by Nikki Giovanni/2Pac
“Unconditional Love”
“Still I Rise”
“Better Dayz”
“Happy Home”
“California Love”
“All Eyez on Me”
“Thug Passion”
“Run Tha Streetz”
“Heaven Ain’t Hard 2 Find”
“Fame”
“Pain”
“Nothing to Lose”
“Fuck the World”
“They Don’t Give a Fuck About Us”
“Fuck All Y’all”
“I’m Losin’ It”
“Hold On, Be Strong”
“All Out”
“Thug 4 Life”
“N.I.G.G.A. (Never Ignorant About Getting Goals Accomplished)”
“Bury Me a G”
“Shit Don’t Stop”
“Stay True”
“Pour Out A Little Liquor”
“Let ‘Em Have It”
“Tradin’ War Stories”
“Shorty Wanna Be a Thug”
“Wonda Why They Call U Bitch”
“Me and My Girlfriend”
“Never Call U Bitch Again”
“Fake Ass Bitches”

“If I Die 2Nite”
“Death Around the Corner”
“Lost Souls”
“Only Fear of Death”
“When Thugz Cry”
“Letter 2 My Unborn”
“Starin’ Through My Rear View”
“God Bless the Dead”
“How Long Will They Mourn Me?”
“Until the End of Time”
“Until the End of Time (RP Remix)”

All forms of protest should be peaceful and non-violent in this world as a disclaimer to all citizens and people on this planet Earth.

Power to the underdogs banner

**The Hate U Gave Little Infants Fucks Everybody
2Pac’s T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E. mentality for life**

For any underrepresented and oppressed social groups in society, it’s time to stand up and fight back for your rights and the respect you deserve. 2Pac provided the power for all underdogs to stand up and fight back and protest from being oppressed in society with his music, life style, and his acronym Thug Life. T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E. is an acronym that was made for all underdogs in society by 2Pac and his family and friends and it means if you hate or oppress an underrepresented group, all that hate will come right back at you and the people will fight back and protest their ideals. So it’s time for underrepresented groups and oppressed people to fight back and end all oppression towards them.

It’s time to stand up and fight back and end your oppression! The list of underrepresented and oppressed social groups below are recommended to use this story and 2pac’s music suggested from the 2Pac protest songs’ banner to protest and fight for any social cause in your country or region worldwide.

Written by Sean & Noah (by author: Shane McDowell in reality)

Underrepresented and oppressed social groups in societies worldwide.

Women
Black people
Black women
LGBTQ people
Emotional males and non-emotional females, straight or gay (aka feminine male's
and non-feminine female's personalities)
Poor people, homeless people, thugs, niggas, gangsters, have nots, and
impoverished people
The lower class, middle class, and the 99%
Underrepresented religious and ethnoreligious groups
Minorities and the oppressed
Agnostics, atheists, and people with no religious preference
Shy people both male and female, introverts or extroverts
Introverts
Black male introverts and black female introverts
Fans of adult & teen cartoons, adult & teen animation, and adult & teen
comics/manga
Cartoon fans
Gamers
Manga and anime fans
Comic book fans
Nerds and geeks
Sick people, people with mental disorders, people with disabilities, old people, and
the handicapped
Non-mainstream people
Anyone oppressed on the planet Earth
Anyone on the planet Earth who struggles

Any underrepresented groups or oppressed people not mentioned above should stand up to fight and protest peacefully too. All forms of protests should be peaceful and non-violent in this world.

They put their papers down after looking and settled down and looked back at each other. "All right perfect, now what's next to do on our agenda?" Sean asked. "Well after doing that it had me thinking again for doing two more, one for supporting introverts in this world which will be a banner and the other just for fun to go along with the proud lists we did before, it'll be the seventh proud list made just for fun now that we finished those and got most of the serious business out the way," Sean said.

“Ok, sounds good. I’ll work on the seventh proud list then while you work on that introvert banner then. Sound like a plan?” Sean asked.

“Yeah sounds perfect, let’s get started then.”

“Ok.”

They huddled together some more papers and began scribbling away with intense spirit. Several minutes passed and then they looked up at each other and passed along each other’s papers to read.

Introverted March banner

The Hate U Gave Little Infants Fucks Everybody

T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E.

Use 2Pac’s acronym to empower the oppressed!

Power to the underdogs & all introverts and black introverts everywhere!

Power to all introverts everywhere!

It’s time for all introverts worldwide to fight back and protest!

It’s about time introverts and black introverts both male and female fought back peacefully for their rights against the extroverted bias in society! It’s time for introverts of all races, genders, and ethnicities to protest and march peacefully and gain the respect they deserve from all extroverts in society!

Extroverts and black extroverts are great and provide the world many benefits and strengths in society but it’s about time introverts and black introverts got more love and attention for their efforts and accomplishments in society as well.

We want equality for all and introverts and introversion is no different. Being an introvert is shaped from birth and from being raised in your environment like with extroverts and extroversion and it’s about time society stopped oppressing introverts for their common traits in society and rather instead should be praised and applauded for their strengths and efforts and talents that they provide the world each and every day to our world and we should work for peace and equality for all introverts and extroverts both white and black and other races, gender, and ethnicities in societies worldwide. Of we introverts and black introverts love and respect extroverts and black extroverts too in this world we just as introverts and black introverts worldwide some love and equality like everybody else out there.

So let's give it up for introverts on this planet Earth and celebrate for all introverts and introversion worldwide with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" and T.H.U.G.L.I.F.E.

Proud List

#7

Proud Statements

2Pac wrote a song called "Don't Stop" and this song can apply to anybody that complains against something else for causing things like violence and things like that when typically those things aren't the cause of the event and problem occurring. Don't always blame things like rap music, TV shows, movies, video games, adult animation and adult comics or manga and anime for being the cause of violence for having things like adult themes, maturity, blood, controlled violence, sexual themes, cartoon violence, action, and other mature themes in its content in this world, we need to listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and use the rating system and research on what really causes things to occur rather than blaming people that aren't involved with causing issues in this world and I'm proud to understand that and support that mentality. Statistics say typically these things people complain about aren't the cause of the violence at all if you research these things online. As long as we humans leave the violence to our fiction and music then parents and adults won't have nothing to complain about and I'm proud to understand that too with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. We should also as humans use the rating system to help fix censorship issues in this world and I'm proud to understand that with the help of 2Pac's "Don't Stop" and "Changes" song too. I respect all people's opinion and views on these topics and subjects and countries and nation's views and policies concerning these issues, subjects, and topics.

Casual gamers and hardcore gamers need to use 2Pac's "Changes" to help respect each other. Whether you're playing on a tablet, phone, console, handheld, or whatever, gamers of all types need to respect each other with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song. This next statement is for the hardcore gaming community, you can debate on which company you like better like Sony, Microsoft, or Nintendo but respect each other's tastes and interests at the end of the day with 2Pac's "Changes" song and try to end the fanboy mentality that everybody's tired of seeing in the hardcore gaming community. Just peacefully debate your company favorites and favorite games without being rude and all that to each other and 2Pac's "Changes" song can help with all that. But yeah casual gamers and hardcore gamers or any type of gamers should respect each other with 2Pac's "Changes" song on this planet, if you like to play console games or handheld video games in public we respect those people's and not judge them for the platforms they like to game on for entertainment. 2Pac's "Changes" for life and I'm proud to understand all that and support respect in the gaming community.

I love *Walt Disney* and his work and I'm proud to be a fan.

I love *Osamu Tezuka* and his work and I'm proud to be a fan.

Dragon Ball Z should never be forgotten no matter that time period we're in and I'm proud to say that.

One Piece should never be forgotten no matter what time we're in and I'm proud to say that.

Naruto should never be forgotten no matter what time we're in and I'm proud to say that.

Yu Yu Hakusho should never be forgotten no matter what time we're in and I'm proud to say that.

Astro boy should never be forgotten no matter what time we're in and I'm proud to say that.

Always make manga and anime characters' act like real people and I'm proud to understand that.

Always try to make good quality manga and anime with unique character designs and creativity in it with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and Young Noble's from the Outlawz song "Do It from the Heart" and I'm proud to support all that.

Always put complexity and creativity in your art and storytelling in this world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.

Adult cartoons, comics, and animation should always have a mainstream presence and audience worldwide and I'm proud to understand that.

Manga and anime should always have a strong mainstream presence and audience worldwide and I'm proud to understand that.

The *One Piece* manga and anime franchise should always be supported worldwide in all respective countries and nations and I'm proud to understand that.

The video game franchise *Dragon Quest* should be a global phenomenon worldwide for all ages and cultures in the world similar to its immense popularity in Japan just like the popularity of the video game franchise *Final Fantasy* and I'm proud to understand that.

The big hit *Detective Conan/Case Closed* manga and anime series should have an audience worldwide and I'm proud to understand that.

Anime films should be released in all theaters worldwide with just as much mainstream advertising as regular films and movies and the anime films should be good quality and creative and I'm proud to understand that.

Anime films should always have an audience in theaters worldwide and they should always be creative and good quality anime films and I'm proud to understand that.

Manga and anime should always remain mainstream and popular worldwide in all time periods and I'm proud to understand that.

Manga and anime should always be mainstream and popular worldwide in all of history and all time periods and I'm proud to understand that. And they should always be creative and have characters that act like real people with creative and unique character designs and I'm proud to understand that.

Dragon Ball is a great manga and anime and deserves an audience worldwide and I'm proud to understand that.

One Piece is a great manga and anime and deserves an audience worldwide and I'm proud to understand that.

Naruto is a great manga and anime and deserves an audience worldwide and I'm proud to understand that.

Bleach is a great manga and anime and deserves an audience worldwide and I'm proud to understand that.

Yu Yu Hakusho is a great manga and anime and deserves an audience worldwide and I'm proud to understand that.

Hunter x Hunter is a great manga and anime and deserves an audience worldwide and I'm proud to understand that.

Fullmetal Alchemist is a great manga and anime and deserves an audience worldwide and I'm proud to understand that.

Pokémon Adventures is a great manga and anime and deserves an audience worldwide and I'm proud to understand that.

I support future films and movies from the *One Piece* manga and anime franchise airing in theaters worldwide and I'm proud to support that.

Manga and anime should always be translated and dubbed into every particular country and nation's native language to make it more accessible to people who don't prefer to read and watch manga and anime in Japanese and I'm proud to understand that.

I support the creativity in *One Piece* and *Naruto* manga and anime series and I'm proud to say that.

I support Let's Players like Chuggaconroy, Cobanermani456, NintendoCapriSun, Saigancat, Kenshin1913, HCBailey and I'm proud to support them and Let's plays because there fun and make great entertainment value for the world to enjoy. I also support gaming channels like AlphaOmegaSin, HappyConsoleGamer, JoshJepson, Shofu, Pat the NES Punk, and other great gaming channels on YouTube and I'm proud to support them.

We should analyze and fix the issues around Let's Plays in this world. I personally love and support Let's Plays and think they help the gaming industry and are free advertising as well for the gaming companies of this world we live in. But regardless getting the legalities sorted out is best so content creators on YouTube can make content without worrying about things and wondering what isn't or is allowed for them to Let's Play and what not. I personally believe all games should be allowed for Let's Plays since it only benefits the companies in my opinion but that is up to the Let's Player and the gaming company with the intellectual property and video game to sort out amongst themselves. That is my personal opinion on Let's Plays and I will always personally support the industry through buying actual games and watching Let's Plays and supporting Let's Players financially as well and I'm proud to support all that and give my opinion on this subject.

Good quality manga like *One Piece*, *Dragon Ball*, *Yu Yu Hakusho*, *Hunter x Hunter*, and *Naruto* should always be the ones that are popular and I'm proud to understand that.

It's time to listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and end the anime girl craze in the manga and anime industry, I recommend that in the anime and manga industry. It's time for the manga and anime industry to listen to Young Noble's from the Outlawz "Do It from the Heart" and 2Pac's "Changes" song and make good quality manga and anime and animation in this world like *Dragon Ball*, *One Piece*, Studio Ghibli films and so on and I'm proud to support that.

I believe graphic novels, comic books, and manga should always have their own large sections in bookstores worldwide and I'm proud to believe that.

All popular manga and anime should always be good quality like *Dragon Ball*, *One Piece*, *Naruto*, *Yu Yu Hakusho*, *Hunter x Hunter*, *Fullmetal Alchemist*, *Bleach*, *Sailor Moon*, *Pokémon*, *Yu-Gi-Oh!*, and so many more good quality manga and anime and I'm proud to understand that.

It's time for manga artists worldwide to listen to 2Pac's "Changes" and make good quality manga and anime like *Dragon Ball*, *One Piece*, *Naruto*, *Pokémon*, *Yu Yu Hakusho*, *Hunter x Hunter*, *Yu-Gi-Oh!*, *Fullmetal Alchemist*, *Pokémon Adventures*, *Monster*, *20th Century Boys*, *Slam Dunk*, *Vagabond*, *Attack on Titan*, *Bleach*, *Death Note*, *Sailor Moon*, *Skip Beat*, and Studio Ghibli films and I'm proud to understand that.

Always support the *One Piece* manga and anime financially worldwide and I'm proud to understand that. You can pick up the manga at your local bookstore and the anime at your local retail store that sells DVDs and Blu-rays or you can support the *One Piece* manga and anime by buying it at your favorite online retailer and I'm proud to support *One Piece*.

Dragon Ball Z fans worldwide I recommend should check out *One Piece*, it has a lot of similarities and you'll probably like both if you like the *Dragon Ball* franchises. You'll notice a unique similarity in main characters with comparing Goku and Luffy and I'm proud to say that and support *One Piece*.

It's time for manga artists and anime creators worldwide to listen to 2Pac's song "Changes" and make manga and anime with good quality storylines and unique and creative character designs

like *One Piece*, *Dragon Ball*, *Sailor Moon*, *Naruto*, and *Yu Yu Hakusho* and stop making generic anime girl manga and anime and I'm proud to understand that.

In my opinion always try to expand your anime drawing style by striving for unique character designs. Things are more interesting that way in my opinion rather than just drawing in the generic manga and anime style and I'm proud to believe that.

I'm attracted to female anime or animated characters and I still treat women with respect and I'm proud to express that.

If you're gonna sexualize female animated and comic book characters, then only do it moderately and I'm proud to believe that.

If you're gonna sexualize female characters in any kind of fiction like movies, books, and animation then only do it moderately and I'm proud to believe that.

I want to see the anime industry make more deep and meaningful storylines and character driven anime & manga that have characters that act like real people with unique character designs and I'm proud to say and believe that.

I love Superman and I'm proud.

I love Batman and I'm proud.

I love Spider-man and I'm proud.

I love X-men and I'm proud.

I love the Incredible Hulk and I'm proud.

I love Iron man and I'm proud.

I love Wonder woman and I'm proud.

I love Catwoman and I'm proud.

I love the Joker and I'm proud.

I love Harley Quinn and I'm proud.

I love *Fantastic Four* and I'm proud.

I love many different types of superheroes and I'm proud.

I love many different types of super villains and I'm proud.

I love Lex Luthor and I'm proud.

I love *Transformers* and I'm proud.

I love *Teenaged Mutant Ninja Turtles* and I'm proud.

I love the *Monster Hunter* video game series and I'm proud.

Dragon Ball Z will always stand the test of time and I'm proud to say that.

One Piece will always stand the test of time and I'm proud to say that.

Naruto will always stand the test of time and I'm proud to say that.

Super Mario will always stand the test of time and I'm proud to say that.

The Legend of Zelda will always stand the test of time and I'm proud to say that.

Pokémon will always stand the test of time and I'm proud to say that.

Dragon Quest will always stand the test of time and I'm proud to say that.

Final Fantasy will always stand the test of time and I'm proud to say that.

I love the original *Dragon Ball* and the whole franchise and I'm proud.

I love *Dragon Ball Z* and I'm proud.

I love *One Piece* and I'm proud.

I love *Naruto* and I'm proud.

I love *Naruto: Shippuden* and I'm proud.

I love *Bleach* (manga) and I'm proud.

I love *Yu Yu Hakusho* and I'm proud.

I love *Hunter x Hunter* and I'm proud.

I love the original *Yu-Gi-Oh!* series and I'm proud.

I love *Yu-Gi-Oh! GX* and I'm proud.

I love *Death Note* and I'm proud.

I love *Dr. Slump* and I'm proud.

I love the *Pokémon Adventures/Special* manga series and I'm proud.

I love *Monster* (manga) and *20th Century Boys* and I'm proud.

I love *Pluto* (manga) and I'm proud.

I love *Astro Boy* and I'm proud.

I love *Kimba the White Lion* and I'm proud.

I love *The Boondocks* TV show and I'm proud.

I love *Sailor Moon* and I'm proud.

I love and appreciate Cartoon Network, Adult Swim, Toonami, Nickelodeon, Disney Channel, and other television networks that aired animation because your shows changed my life and I love these shows so thank you and I'm proud to say that.

I support anime platforms like Crunchyroll in this world, especially to be used as a platform to help make anime more accessible to viewers legally online to enjoy for entertainment value similar to company's and online TV/Movie platforms like Netflix and Hulu. I'm proud to support Crunchyroll and more anime becoming accessible to people worldwide on this planet Earth.

Always support manga and anime in all time periods in this world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.

Always support comic books in all time periods in this world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.

Always support video games in all time periods in this world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.

Always support all forms of animation and comic books in this world like comic strips, animation, anime, manga, cartoons, and so on in all time periods in this world with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song and I'm proud to understand that.

I love the classic *Yu-Gi-Oh!* series so much and I'm proud, *GX* is good too.

I love *Fullmetal Alchemist* and I'm proud.

I love *Detective Conan/Case Closed* and I'm proud.

I love *Great Teacher Onizuka* aka *GTO* and I'm proud.

I love *Sailor Moon* and I'm proud.

I love *Cowboy Bebop* and I'm proud.

I love *Inuyasha* and I'm proud.

I love *Neon Genesis Evangelion* and I'm proud.

I love *Fairy Tail* and I'm proud.

I love *Sword Art Online* and I'm proud.

I love *Mobile Suit Gundam Wing* and I'm proud.

I love *Fist of the North Star* and I'm proud.

I love *Jojo Bizarre Adventure* and I'm proud.

I love *Beck* and I'm proud.

I love *Samurai Champloo* and I'm proud.

I love *Attack on Titan* and I'm proud.

I love *Hajime no Ippo* and I'm proud.

I love *Major* (manga) and I'm proud.

I love *Cross Game* and I'm proud.

I love *Skip Beat* and I'm proud.

I love *Fruits Basket* and I'm proud.

I love *Kids on the Slope* and I'm proud.

I love *Hikaru no Go* and I'm proud.

I love *Rurouni Kenshin* and I'm proud.

I love *Eyeshield 21* and I'm proud.

I love *Gintama* and I'm proud.

I love *Bakuman* and I'm proud.

I love *Berserk* and I'm proud.

I love *Ghost in the Shell* and I'm proud.

I love *Mushishi* and I'm proud.

I love *Katekyo Hitman Reborn!* and I'm proud.

I love *Baccano!* and I'm proud.

I love *Soul Eater* and I'm proud.

I love *Real* (manga) and I'm proud.

I love *Ouran High School Host Club* and I'm proud.

I love *Black Lagoon* and I'm proud.

I love the original two seasons of *Digimon* and I'm proud.

I love *Space Brothers* and I'm proud.

I love *Shaman King* and I'm proud.

I love *Ranma 1/2* and I'm proud.

I love *Slam Dunk* (manga) and I'm proud.

I love *Vagabond* and I'm proud.

I love *Marchen Awakens Romance* and I'm proud.

I love *One Punch Man* and I'm proud.

I love *One Piece* and *Dragon Ball* and I'm proud.

Main characters in manga and anime all have many interesting personality types and I'm proud to understand that. Some to mention here are that Goku is an ENFP, Luffy is an ENFP, Naruto is an ENFP, Gon is an ENFP, Yusuke is an ESTP, Edward Elric is an ENTP, Ichigo is an ISTP, Natsu is an ESFP, Aang is an ENFP, Korra is an ESTP, Kenji is an ENFP, Dr. Tenma is an INFJ, and so on and I'm proud to know the personality types of the popular manga and anime characters.

I love so many other anime and I'm proud.

I love the whole *Pokemon* franchise and video games and I'm proud.

I love *Avatar: The Last Airbender* and *The Legend of Korra* and I'm proud.

I'm very proud to be an anime fan.

I'm very proud to be a gamer fan.

I'm very proud to be a comic book fan.

I'm very proud to be a nerd and geek.

I'm very proud to be a fan of cartoons and animation.

I'm very proud of my interests.

Just because I'm an anime fan doesn't mean I like all of it, I have no interests in bad anime and I'm proud to say that.

Thank you Yoshihiro Togashi for making *Yu Yu Hakusho*, it's made a huge inspiration for *Spirit Story* and I'm proud to say that.

I have no interest in bad anime and I'm proud, only interested in the good ones.

I appreciate good quality, inspiring anime and I'm proud, the other stuff I don't care for.

Inspiration should be the center of your life and I'm proud to say that.

I'm play handheld video games in public and I'm proud to play them.

I'm a picky gamer and I'm proud.

I'm a picky anime fan and I'm proud.

I think gamers should get into the *Dragon Quest* series along with *Final Fantasy* and *Kingdom Hearts* because they're great RPGs and fun to play and I love them and I'm proud to support them.

Never let money get in the way with creating a great, good quality video game for all the video game developers and gaming companies out there and I'm proud to believe that. This mentality applies all content creation and creators and I'm proud to believe that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.

Fans shouldn't have to worry about if a video game is coming over or not overseas, they should be able to look forward to any game they want to play in this world and not worry about localization issues and I'm proud to support that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.

I support deep storytelling and unique characters and character development in Mario RPG video games and Mario RPG franchises like *Paper Mario*, the *Mario and Luigi* series, and *Super Mario RPG* and I'm proud to support that. Fans would like to see the series return to its roots and I'm proud to support that with the help of 2Pac's "Changes" song.

I love and support the fantastic video game *Super Mario RPG: Legend of The Seven Stars* and I'm proud to love and support that game. The animation and content creator Christopher Niosi made excellent music videos based on the series that you can check out online, support him and his work as well since he makes great quality content in animation and I'm proud to support him and his work.

I love *Dragon Quest* and I'm proud.

I love *Final Fantasy* and I'm proud.

I love *Kingdom Hearts* and I'm proud.

I love *Super Mario* and I'm proud.

I love *The Legend of Zelda* and I'm proud.

I love *Pokémon* and I'm proud.

I love *Super Smash Bros.* and I'm proud.

I love *Sonic the Hedgehog* and I'm proud.

I love *Mega man* and I'm proud.

I love *Donkey Kong* and I'm proud.

I love *Metroid* and I'm proud.

I love *Star Fox* and I'm proud.

I love the *Mother/Earthbound* series and I'm proud.

I love *F-Zero* and I'm proud.

I love *Kirby* and I'm proud.

I love *Chrono Trigger* and I'm proud.

I love Nintendo and I'm proud.

I love Sony's PlayStation and I'm proud.

I love Microsoft's Xbox and I'm proud.

I love *Elder Scrolls* and I'm proud.

I love *Street Fighter* and I'm proud.

I love Tekken and I'm proud.

I love *Mortal Kombat* and I'm proud.

I love sports games and I'm proud.

I love *Metal Gear* and I'm proud.

I love First Person Shooter games and I'm proud.

I love casual games and I'm proud.

I love *Harry Potter* and I'm proud.

I love *Star Wars* and I'm proud.

I love *The Lord of the Rings* and I'm proud.

I love *Twilight* and I'm proud.

I love *The Hunger Games* and I'm proud.

I love Disney and Pixar and I'm proud.

I love *Charlie Brown* and I'm proud.

I love *Calvin and Hobbes* and I'm proud.

I love Studio Ghibli and I'm proud.

I think everyone should get into *Detective Conan/Case Closed* and I'm proud to say that because its a great detective show and manga.

I love *One Piece* and I think everybody should watch and read it because its a great series along with other great shonen series like *Dragon Ball Z* and *Naruto* and I'm proud to be a fan of them.

I love *One Piece's* art style and I'm proud, it's very creative, original, and unique.

One Piece is a fantastic series and I'm proud to be a fan of it.

Dragon Ball is a fantastic series and I'm proud to be a fan of it.

Naruto is a fantastic series and I'm proud to be a fan of it.

I'm such a huge fan of the *Dragon Quest* series and I'm proud to be a fan.

I'm such a huge fan of the *Detective Conan/Case Closed* series and I'm proud to be a fan.

I'm such a huge fan of the *One Piece* series and I'm proud to be a fan.

Super Mario games are fantastic video games and I'm proud to be a fan of them.

The Legend of Zelda games are fantastic video games and I'm proud.

Pokémon games are fantastic video games and I'm proud.

Dragon Quest games are fantastic video games and I'm proud.

Final Fantasy games are fantastic video games and I'm proud.

Kingdom Hearts games are fantastic video games and I'm proud.

I love Marvel Comics and I'm proud.

I love DC Comics and I'm proud.

I love the anime art style and I'm proud.

I don't like bad anime and I'm proud.

I don't like bad music and I'm proud.

I'm not embarrassed to love video games and I'm proud.

I'm not embarrassed to love manga and anime and I'm proud.

I'm not embarrassed to love cartoons and I'm proud.

I'm not embarrassed to love comic books and I'm proud.

I'm not embarrassed to love nerd culture and I'm proud.

I'm a writer, artist, comic book creator, manga artist, animator, cartoonist, or in another creative career and I sometimes face financial challenges but I still want to do what I love and wouldn't change my career path for the world and I'm proud of my career choices and very happy.

I believe creativity should be in all music and I'm proud.

I can be whatever I want to be if I try, you can too and I'm proud to believe that.

I only like original anime character designs and I'm proud.

I only like original anime with unique character designs and deep storylines and I'm proud.

I like anime with unique and depthful characters that act like real people and I'm proud.

They put their papers down and looked back at each other one final time. Breaths of relief struck their mouth and chest as they settled down and sat in the calm, shadow struck forest grounds.

"Alright now, that was some great fun I think. But anyways I think that about wraps it up. So do you have any concluding statements before we go inside?" Noah asked.

"Yeah it is getting late, well nothing but what we already said before we got into the fun stuff. I hope things like racism, sexism, and everything ceases to exist. All underdogs in society need to gain more love and recognition in the world. Poor people need more money and support in the world so we should be aiming to implement some tax like system maybe in which every human being on earth donates money periodically to the poor and lower paid individuals in need to help end homelessness and poverty and starvation worldwide.

Everybody on the planet needs to respect each other and all that. So yeah, that's about it, that all about sums it up in one big statement and paragraph. I have nothing else to say really anymore, what about you?" Sean said.

"No, nothing else. I'm about ready to rest when you are," Noah said.

"Alright, then let's get out of here finally then."

"Ok then, then we'll be off."

They stood up and began packing their things while the cold wind blew past their sharp stiff skin. They materialized the objects and proceeded to walk off in the distance toward the huts and disappeared slow into the mist of the forest area.